This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

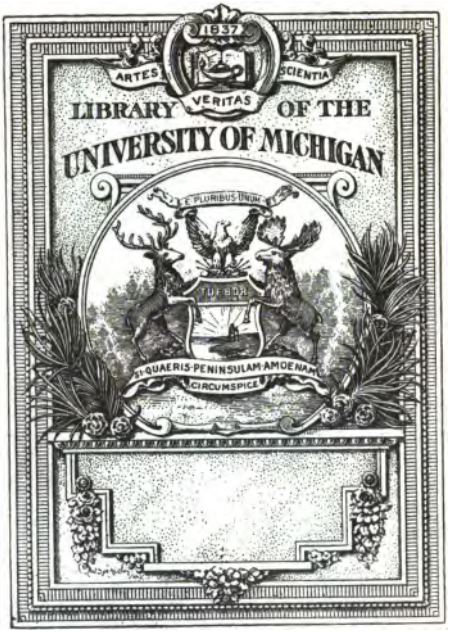
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


1837
ARTES
SCIENTIA
VERITAS
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
E PLURIBUS UNUM
TUEBOR
si QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE

828
P183 pa.
1784

24624

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS,

A CORNISH MAN.

RELATING PARTICULARLY,

His Shipwreck near the South Pole; his wonderful Paſſage through a Subterraneous Cavern into a kind of new world; his there meeting with a Gawry, or Flying Woman, whoſe life he preſerved, and afterwards married her; his extraordinary conveyance to the Country of Glums and Gawrys, or Men and Women that Fly. Likewiſe a deſcription of this ſtrange Country, with the Laws, Cuſtoms, and Manners of its inhabitants, and the Author's remarkable Tranſactions among them.

Taken from his own mouth, in his Paſſage to *England*, from off *Cape Horn*, in *America*, in the Ship *Hector*.

With an Introduction, giving an Account of the ſurpriſing Manner of his coming on board that Veſſel, and his death on his landing at *Plymouth*, in the Year 1739.

Robert Paltock,

By *R. S.* a Passenger in the Hector.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

BERWICK:

PRINTED FOR W. PHORSON, AND B. LAW, AVE-MARIA-LANE. LONDON.

M.DCC.LXXXIV.

A GENUINE ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF PETER WILKINS.

CHAP. I.

Peter prepares for his fathers reception; arguments about his beard; expects his wife; reflections on her not coming; sees a messenger on the rock; has notice of Pendlehamby's arrival, and prepares a treat.

THE news my late visitors had brought me, set my mind quite at ease; and now having leisure to look into my own affairs, with the summer before me, I began to consider what preparations I must make against the return of my wife; for according to the report I had heard, I concluded there would be a great number of attendants; and as her father

would no doubt, pique himself upon the grandeur of his equipage, if his followers ſhould ſee nothing in me but a plain dirty fellow, I ſhould be contemned, and perhaps my wife, through my means be ſlighted; or, at leaſt, loſe that reſpect, the report of me had in a great meaſure procured her.

THE firſt thing therefore that I did, was to look into my cheſts again, wherein I knew there were many of the Potugueſe captains cloaths, and take out ſuch as would be moſt ſuitable to the occaſion, and lay them all by themſelves. I found a blue cloth laced-coat, double-breaſted, with very large gold buttons, and very broad gold button holes, lined with white ſilk; a pair of black velvet breeches, a large gold-laced hat, and a point neck-cloth, with two or three very good ſhirts, two pair of red-heeled ſhoes, a pair of white, and another of ſcarlet ſilk ſtockings, two ſilver-hilted ſwords, and ſeveral other good things; but upon examination of theſe cloaths, and by a letter or two found in the pockets of ſome of them, directed to Captain Jeremiah Vauclaile, in Threadneedle-ſtreet, London, I judged theſe belonged to the Engliſh captain, taken by the Portugueſe ſhip in Africa. I immediately tried ſome of them on, and thought they became me very well, and laid all thoſe in particular cheſts, to be ready when the time came, and ſet them into one of my inner rooms.

UPON examining the contents of another cheſt, I found a long ſcarlet cloak, laced, a caſe of razors, a pair of ſciſſars, and ſhaving-glaſs; a long wig, and two bob-wigs, and laid them by; for I was determined, as I might poſſibly have no other opportunity, to make myſelf appear as conſiderable as I could.

WHEN I had digeſted in my mind upon what occaſions I would appear in either of them, and laid them in proper order, Pedro and I went ſeveral days to work with the net, and caught abundance of fiſh, which I ſalted and dried; and we cut a great quantity of long graſs to dry, and ſpread in my tent for the lower gentry, and made up a little cock of it; we alſo cut and piled up a large parcel of fire-wood; and as I had now about thirty of the beſt fiſh ſkins, each of which would cover four chairs, I nailed them on for cuſhions to my chairs and the reſt I ſewed together, and made rugs of them.

I HAD obſerved, that my brother Quangrollart, and Roſig, neither of them had beards, and as they were quite ſmooth chinned, I conjectured that none of their countrymen had any; ſo, ſays I, if that is the caſe, as I have now both ſciſſars and razors, I will even cut off mine to be like them; I then ſet up my glaſs, taking my ſciſſars in hand, but had not quite cloſed them for a ſnip, when I conſidered, that as I was not of their country, and was ſo different from them in other reſpects, whether it would not add to my dignity, to appear with my beard before them: This I debated ſome time, and then determined in favor of my beard; but as this queſtion ſtill ran in my mind, and I wavered ſometimes this way, ſometimes that: I ſome days after prepared again for execution, and took a large ſnip off; when, ſays I, how can I tell whether I can ſhave after all, I have not tried yet, and if I cannot, how much more ridiculous ſhall I look with ſtubbed hair here and there, than with this comely beard? I muſt ſay, I never in my life had ſo long a debate with myſelf, it holding upwards of two months, varying almoſt every time I thought of it, till one day dreſſing myſelf in a ſuit I had

not before tried on, and looking in the glaſs; it can never be, ſays I, that this grave beard ſhould ſuit with theſe fine cloaths: No, I will have it off I am reſolved. I had no ſooner given another good ſnip, than ſpying the cloak, I had a mind to ſee how I looked in that: Ay, ſays I, now I ſee I muſt either wear this beard, or not this cloak. How majeſtic does it look? So ſage, ſo grave, it denotes wiſdom and ſolidity; and if they already think well of me, do not let me be fool enough to relinquiſh my claim to that for a gay coat. I had no ſooner fixed on this, than I took up all the implements to put again into the cheſt; and the laſt of them being the glaſs, I would have one more look before I parted with it: But my beard made ſuch a horrid frightful figure, with the three great cuts in it, that though it grieved me to think I muſt part with it juſt when I had come to a reſolution to preſerve it, I fell to work with my ſciſſars, and off it came; and after two or three trials, I became very expert with my razor.

WINTER coming on, as I knew I muſt ſoon have more occaſion than ever for a ſtock of proviſion, from the increaſe of mouths I expected; I laid in a ſtock for a little army, and when the hurry of that was over, I kept a ſharp look out upon the level, in expectation of my company; and had once a mind to have brought my tent thither to entertain them in: But it was too much trouble for the hands I had, ſo I dropped the deſign. I took one or other of the children with me every day, and grew more and more uneaſy, at hearing nothing of them; and as uncertain attendance naturally breeds thoughtfulneſs, and the hours in no employ paſs ſo leiſurely, as in that; my mind preſaged

numberleſs interveening accidents, that might, if not intirely prevent their coming, at leaſt poſtpone it.

THINKS I, and that I fixed for my ſtandard, Youwarkee, I am ſure, would come if ſhe could; but then ſays I, here is a long flight, and to be undertaken by an old man too; for I thought my father-in-law much older than I afterwards found him, who is now ſafe and quiet at home, and having his daughter with him, is no doubt deſirous of continuing ſo: Now what cares he for my uneaſineſs, he can find one pretence or other, no doubt, of drilling on the time till the dark weather is over; and then, forſooth, it will be too light to come; and thus ſhall I be hung up in ſuſpence for another year: Or, what if my brother, as he called himſelf; for he may be no more a brother of mine than the pope's, for aught I know, came only on a pretence to ſee how I went on; and not finding, for all his ſham compliments to me, his ſiſter married to his father's liking, ſhould adviſe him not to ſend my wife back again; and ſo all the trouble I have had on their account, ſhould only prove a ſtanding monument of my fooliſh credulity! Nay, it is not impoſſible, but as I have already had one meſſage, to inform me Tommy and Hallycarnie are provided for, as much as to ſay in plain Engliſh, I ſhall ſee them no more, ſo I may ſoon have another, by ſome ſneaking puppy or other, whom I ſuppoſe I am to treat for the news, to tell me my wife and Patty are provided for too, and I am to thank my kind benefactors, for taking ſo great a charge off my hands. Am I? No; I'll firſt ſet my tent, cloaths, chairs, and all other mementos of my ſtupidity on fire, and by periſhing what is left of us in the blaze, exterminate at once the wretched remains of a deſerted family. I hate to be made a fool of.

I HAD ſcarce finiſhed my ſoliloquy, when I heard a monſtrous ſort of a groan, or growl in the air, like thunder at a diſtance. What is that, Pedro? ſaid I; I never heard the like before, daddy, ſays he. Look about boy, ſays I, do you ſee any thing? We heard it again; Hark! ſays Pedro, it comes from that end of the lake. While we were liſtening to the third ſound, ſays Pedro, daddy, yonder is ſomething black upon the rock, I did not ſee juſt now. Why? it moves, ſays I, Pedro, here is news, good or bad. Hope the beſt, daddy, ſays Pedro, I wiſh it may be mammy. No, ſays I, Pedro, I do not expect her before I hear from her. Why then, ſays Pedro, here they come, I can plainly diſcern three of them: If my brother Tommy ſhould be there, daddy? No, ſays I, Pedro, no ſuch good news, they tell me Tommy is provided for, and that is to ſuffice for the loſs of my child: And yet, Pedro, if I could get you ſettled in England, in ſome good employ, I ſhould conſent to that; but what Tommy is to be, I know not.

BY this time, the three perſons were ſo near, that ſeeing us they called out, Peter; and I making ſigns for them to alight, they ſettled juſt before me, and told me, that Pendlehamby and Youwarkee would be with me by light next day.

I HAD no ſooner heard this, but ſo far was I from firing my tent, that I invited them to my grotto, ſet the beſt cheer before them, and with over-haſte to do more than one thing at once, I even left undone, what I might have done.

I ASKED them, who came with my father? and they told me, about two hundred guards: That knock-

ed me up again, as I had but prepared for about ſixty; thinks I, my ſcheme is all out wiſted. I then aſked them, what loud noiſe it was, and if they heard it, juſt before I ſaw them come over the rock. They told me, they heard only the Gripſack [trumpet] they brought with them to diſcover them from ordinary meſſengers; and then one of them ſhewed it me; for I had before only taken it for a long ſtaff in his hand: But, ſays he, you will hear them much louder to-morrow, and longer before they come to you.

HAVING entertained them to their content, I ſent them to reſt, not chuſing to aſk any queſtions; for I avoided anticipating the pleaſure of hearing all the news from Youwarkee herſelf. However, the boys and I prepared what proviſions of fowl and fiſh we could in the time, to be ready cold, againſt they came, and then lay down ourſelves.

CHAP. II.

Peter ſettles the formality of his fathers reception; deſcription of their march, and alighting; receives his father; conducts him to the grotto; offers to beg pardon for his marriage; is prevented by Pendlehamby; Youwarkee not known in Engliſh habit; quarters the officers in the tent.

MY mind ran ſo all night upon ſettling the formality with which I ſhould receive Pendlehamby, that I got little or no reſt. In the morning I ſpread my table

in as neat a manner as I could, and having dreſſed myſelf, Pedro, Jemmy, and David, we marched to the plain; myſelf carrying a chair, and each of them a ſtool. I was dreſſed in a cinnamon-coloured gold-buttoned coat, ſcarlet waiſtcoat, velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, the campain-wig flowing, a gold-laced hat and feather, point cravat, ſilver ſword, and over all my cloak: As for my ſons, they had the cloaths my wife made before ſhe went.

WHEN we heard them coming, I marſhalled the children in the order they were to ſit, and charged them to do as they ſaw me do, but to keep rather a half pace backwarder than me; and then ſitting down in my chair, I ordered Pedro to his ſtool on my right hand, and Jemmy to his on my left, and David to the left of Jemmy.

I THEN ſent two of the meſſengers to meet them, with inſtructions to let Youwarkee know where I waited for them, that they might alight at a ſmall diſtance before they came to me. This ſhe having communicated to her father, the order ran through the whole corps immediately, when and where to alight.

IT will be impoſſible for me, by words, to raiſe your ideas adequate to the grandeur of the appearance this body of men made, coming over the rock; but as I perceive your curioſity is on the ſtretch to comprehend it, I ſhall faintly aim at gratifying you.

AFTER we had heard, for ſome time, a ſound as of diſtant rumbling thunder, or of a thouſand bears in conſort, ſerenading in their hoarſeſt voices, we could juſt perceive, by the clearneſs of the dawn gilding the edge

of the rock, a black ſtream ariſe above the ſummit of it, ſeemingly about forty paces broad, when the noiſe increaſing very much, the ſtream aroſe broader and broader, and then you might perceive rows of poles; with here and there a ſtreamer: And as ſoon as ever the main body appeared above the rock, there was ſuch an univerſal ſhout, as rent the air, and echoing from the oppoſite rock, returned the ſalute to them again. This was ſucceeded with a moſt raviſhing ſound of voices, in ſong, which continued till they came pretty near me; and then the firſt line, conſiſting of all the trumpets, mounting a conſiderable height, and ſtill blowing, left room for the next ranks, about twenty a-breaſt, to come forward beneath them; each of which dividing in the middle, alighted in ranks, at about twenty paces diſtance from my right and left, making a lane before me, at the farther end of which, Pendlehamby and his two daughters alighted, with about twenty of his guards behind them, the remainder conſiſting of about twenty more, coming forward over my head and alighting behind me; and during this whole ceremony, the gripſacks ſounded with ſuch a din, it was aſtoniſhing.

Poor Youwarkee who knew nothing of my dreſs, or of the loſs of my beard, was thunderſtruck when ſhe ſaw me, not being able to obſerve any viſage I had, for my great wig and hat; but putting a good face on the matter, and not doubting, but if the perſon ſhe ſaw was not me, ſhe ſhould ſoon find her huſband, for ſhe knew the children by their cloaths, ſhe came forward at her father's right-hand, I ſitting as great as a lord, till they came within about thirty paces of my ſeat, and then gravely riſing, I pulled off my hat and made my obeiſance, and again, at ten ſteps forwarder; ſo

that I made my third low bow close at the feet of Pendlehamby, the children all doing the same. I then kneeling with one leg, embraced his right-knee, who, raising me up, embraced me. Then retiring three steps, and coming forward again, I embraced Youwarkee some time, during which, the children observed my pattern with Pendlehamby, who took them up and kissed them.

I WHISPERED Youwarkee, to know if any more of her relations were in the train, to whom I ought to pay my compliments; she told me, only her sister Hallycarnie, just behind her father: I then saluted her, and stepping forward to the old gentleman's left-hand, I ushered him through the lines of guards to my chair, where I caused him to sit down, with Youwarkee and Hallycarnie on each side, and myself on the left of Hallycarnie.

AFTER expressing the honour done me by Pendlehamby in this visit, I told him, I had a little grotto about half a mile through the wood, to which, if he pleased to command, we would retire; for I had only placed that seat to relieve him, immediately upon his descent.

PENDLEHAMBY rose, and all the gripsacks sounded, he leading Youwarkee in his right-hand, and I Hallycarnie in mine.

AT the grotto, my father being seated, taking Youwarkee in my hand, we paid our obeisance to him. I would have asked his pardon, for taking his daughter to wife without his leave, and was going on in a set speech, I had studied for the purpose; but he refused

to hear me, telling me I was miſtaken, he had conſented. I was replying, I knew he had been ſo good to paſs it over, but that would not excuſe—when he again interrupted me, by ſaying, if I approve it, and eſteem you, what can you deſire more; ſo finding the ſubject ungrateful, I deſiſted.

I THEN gave each of them a ſilver cann of Madiera, and Youwarkee retired. I ſoon made an excuſe to follow her, to learn if ſhe was pleaſed with what I had done. Says ſhe, my deareſt, what is come to you; I'll promiſe you but for fear of ſurprizing my father, I had diſowned you for my huſband. Dear Youwee, ſays I, do you approve my dreſs, for this is the Engliſh faſhion. This, Peter, ſays ſhe, I perceived attracted all eyes to you, and indeed is very ſhowy, and I approve it in regard to thoſe we are now to pleaſe; but you are not to imagine I eſteem you more in this than in your own old jacket; for it is Peter I love, in this, and all things elſe; but ſtep in again, I ſhall only dreſs, and come to you.

MY wife being dreſſed in her Engliſh gown, juſt croſſed the room where my father ſat to ſee Dicky, who was in another ſide-room. I was then ſitting by and talking with him. Son, ſays my father, I underſtood you had no other woman in this arkoe but my daughter; for ſurely you have no child ſo tall as that, pointing to my wife. No Sir, ſaid I, that is a friend. Is ſhe come to you, ſays he, in my daughter's abſence? O Sir, ſays I, ſhe is very well known to my wife.

WHILST we were talking, in comes Youwarkee with the child in her arms, which ſhe kept covered to her wriſts with her gown-ſleeve, to hide her graundee;

and playing with the child, talked only Engliſh to it. Is this your youngeſt ſon? ſays my father. I told him yes. Pray Madam, ſays I, bring the child to my father; Madam, ſays he, you have a fine baby in your arms, has his mother ſeen him ſince ſhe came home? He ſpeaking this in his own tongue, and Youwarkee looking at me as if ſhe could not underſtand him, I interpreted it to her. My ſiſter then deſired to ſee the child, but I was forced again to interpret there too. In ſhort, they both talked with my wife near half an hour, but neither of them knew her; till at laſt, ſaying in her own language, that is your grand-daddy, my dear Dicky, the old gentleman ſmoked her out; I'll be ſlit, ſays he, if that is not Youwarkee. It is impoſſible, ſays Hallycarnie. Indeed ſiſter, ſays Youwarkee, you are miſtaken; and my father proteſting he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of her, till ſhe ſpoke in his tongue, roſe, and kiſſing her and the child, deſired her to appear in that habit during his ſtay.

I ASKED Pedro what proviſion had been made for the guards. Son, ſays my father, I bring not this number of people to eat you up; they have their ſubſiſtance with them, and he would by no means ſuffer me to allow them any. I then deſired to know if there were any officers, or others, to whom he would have ſhewn any particular marks of diſtinction. Son, ſays the old Glumm, you ſeem to have ſtudied punctillios, and though I ſhould be ſorry to incommode you for their ſakes, if you could procure ſome ſhelter, and ſleep room, for about twenty of them, who are ſuperiors, ten at a time, while the reſt are on duty, I ſhould be glad. I told him I had purpoſely erected a tent, which would with great eaſe accommodate a greater number; and as they were of diſtinction, with his leave, I

inſiſted upon providing for them; to which, with ſome reluctance, I procured his conſent.

When Pendlehamby was refreſhed, he would go with me to ſee the officers quarters; and ſhewing him my tent, he having never ſeen ſuch a thing before, was going to climb up the out-ſide of it, taking it for earth. Hold Sir, ſaid I, you cannot do ſo: Then taking him to the front of it, I turned aſide the blue cloth, and deſired him to walk in; at which he ſeemed wonderfully pleaſed, and aſked me how it was made. I told him, in as few words as I could, but he underſtood ſo little of it, that any thing elſe I had ſaid might have done as well. He mightily approved it, and calling the chief officer, told him, that was their quarters. Then turning to the officer, I deſired he would command my houſe, and that proviſions ſhould be ſupplied to his quarters daily; at which he heſitating; I aſſured him I had my father's leave for what I offered; whereupon he ſtroked his chin.

I then aſked him if he had any clever fellows under him, to ſerve them and dreſs their proviſions; but he hoped, he ſaid, they were ready dreſſed, as his men knew little of that matter; but for any other piece of ſervice, as many as I pleaſed, ſhould be at my command.

CHAP. III.

The manner of their dinner; believe the fish and fowl to be fruits; hears his brother and the Colambs are coming; account of their lying; Peter's reflections on the want of the graundee; they view the Arkoe; servants harder to please than their masters; reason for different dresses the same day.

PENDLEHAMBY having a mind to view my arkoe, took a long walk with Hallycarnie in the wood till dinner time; and he having before told me that some of his guards always waited on him at meals; I ordered their dinner before his return, sending a large dish of cold fowls, cut into joints, into the tent, to be spread on clean leaves I had laid on the chests, and setting a sufficient quantity of bread and fish there also, I desired the officers present to refresh themselves now, and the rest, when relieved, should have a fresh supply. I saw there was an oddity in their countenances, which at first I did not comprehend; but presently turning about to the superior, Sir, says I, though this food may look unusual to you, it is what my island affords, and you will be better reconciled to it after tasting, so taking a piece of fowl, and dipping it in the salt, I eat a bit myself, and recommended another to him; who eating it, they all fell to without further scruple, above all things commending the salt, as what they had never tasted the like of before, though they thought they had both of the fish and fowl.

I THEN told them where my supply of water came from, and that they must furnish themselves with that by their own men.

UPON the return of my father and ſiſter, the grip-ſack ſounded for dinner, when four officers, on duty, entering, deſired, as their poſts, to have the ſerving up of the diſhes; one of them I perceived, having ſet on the firſt diſh, never ſtirred from behind Pendlehamby; but upon his leaſt word or ſign, ordered the others what to do or bring, which he only preſented to my father; and he frequently gave him a piece from his own plate; but the other officers ſerved at the table promiſcuouſly.

AFTER dinner I brought in a bowl of punch, when begging leave to proceed in my country method, I drank to my father's health. So daughter, ſays he to my wife, we are at the old game again. Son, ſays he, this is no novelty to me, Youwarkee conſtantly drinking to the health of her dear Peter, and the children at Graundevolet, and obliging us to pledge her, as ſhe called it; but I thank you, and will return your civility: So taking a glaſs, ſon and daughter, ſays he, long life, love and unity attend you and my grandchildren. Youwarkee and I, both riſing till he had done, returned him our thanks.

WHEN we had ſat ſome time, ſon, ſays my father, you and your wife having lived ſo retired, I fear my company, and attendants, muſt put you to an inconvenience; now as my ſon intends you a viſit alſo, in company with ſeveral of my brother Colambs, if we ſhall be too great a load upon you, declare it, for they will be at Battingdrig Arkoe to-morrow, to know whether it will be agreeable for them to proceed.

YOU know ſon, ſays my father, the mouth is a great devourer, and that the ſtock your family cannot con-

ſume in a year, by multiplying their numbers may be reduced in a day; now freely let me know, for you ſay you provided for us, how your ſtock ſtands; that you may not only pleaſure us, but we not injure you.

I TOLD him as for dried fiſh I had a vaſt quantity, and that my fowls were ſo numerous I knew not my ſtock; as to bread I had a great deal, and might have almoſt what more I would; and then for freſh fiſh, the whole province of Arndrumſtake could not ſoon devour them; but for my pickles and preſerves, I had neither ſuch large quantities, or conveniences to beſtow them if I had.

IF this be the caſe ſon, ſays my father, I may ſend your brother word to proceed; and diſpatched ten meſſengers with a gripſack to haſten his ſon's arrival.

IT now began to be time for reſt, and the old gentleman growing pretty mellow with the punch, which by the hearty pulls he took at it, I perceived was no diſagreeable entertainment to him; I conducted him to his repoſe, and diſpoſing of the reſt of the family, Youwarkee and I, with great impatience, retired.

YOU may imagine, I was ſincerely glad to find myſelf once more alone with my Youwarkee; when, after a tranſport of mutual endearments, I deſired to know how Pendlehamby firſt received her; which ſhe told me, with every circumſtance, in ſo affecting a manner, that the tears forced paſſage from my eyes in perfect ſtreams, and I loved the dear man ever after as my own father.

"SHE told me, Tommy was in great favor at court before her brother returned from me; but ever ſince I ſent him the flagellet, he had been careſſed above meaſure, and would ſoon be a great man. That Hallycarnie was a conſtant attendant on Jahamel, both in her diverſions and retirement; and ſhe did not doubt would in time marry very well. As for Patty, ſhe ſaid, her father intended, with my leave, to adopt her his own child.

MY wife ſlept very ſound after her journey; but my hurry of ſpirits denying me that refreſhment, I never ſo much as now lamented the want of the graundee: for thinks I, now I have once again taſted the ſweets of ſociety, how ſhall I ever reliſh a total deſertion of it, which in a few days muſt be the caſe, when all this company are fled, and myſelf am reduced to my old jacket and water cart again. Now if I was as others here are, I might make a better figure than they, by my ſuperior knowledge of things, and have the world my own: Nay, I would fly to my own country, or to ſome other part of the world, where even the ſtrangeneſs of my appearance would procure me a good ſubſiſtance. But, ſays I, if with my graundee I ſhould looſe my ſight, or only be able to live in the dark in England? Why, I ſhould be full as bad as I am here, for no body would be able to keep me company abroad, as my hours for the air would be theirs of retirement; and then at home, it would be much the ſame; no one would prefer my company in a dark room in the day time, when they could enjoy others in the light of the ſun; then how ſhould I be the better for the graundee? Unleſs I fixed a reſolution of living here, or here-abouts; and then, to get into company, I muſt

retire to ſtill darker regions, which my eyes are no ways adapted to; in ſhort I muſt be quite new moulded, new made, and new born too, before I can attain my deſires. Therefore, Peter, ſays I, be content, you have been happy here in your wife and children, without theſe things; then never make yourſelf ſo wretched as to hope for a change which can never poſſibly happen, and which, perhaps, if obtained might undo you; but intend only what you can compaſs, by weighing all circumſtances, and your felicity will lie in very narrow bounds; free from two of the greateſt evils a man can be beſet by, hopes and fears; two inſeperable companions, and deadly enemies to peace. For a man is deſtroyed by hope, through fear of diſappointment. This brought me a ſhew of peace again; ſurely, ſays I, I am one of the moſt unaccountable amongſt mankind: I never can reflect till I am worn down with vexation. O Gaulepze! Gaulepze! ſays I, I ſhall never forget thy ſpeech after engaging the Crocodile; that every thing was to be attained by reſolution, by him that takes both ends of a thing in his view at once, and fairly deliberates what may be given, and taken, from end to end. Surely, ſays I, this ought to be engraven on braſs, as I wiſh it was on my heart; it would prevent me many painful hours, help me with more eaſe to compaſs attainable ends, and to reſt content under difficulties inſuperable: And if I live to riſe again, I will place it where it ſhall never more be out of my ſight, and will enforce it, not only more and more on myſelf, but on my children.

WITH this thought I dropt on ſleep, and with this I awaked again; and the firſt thing I did, was to find a proper place to write it, which having fixed for the

door of my cupboard, I took a burnt ſtick for my pencil, and wrote as follows, "He that is reſolved to overcome, muſt have both ends of an object in view at once, and fairly deliberate what may be given and taken, from end to end; and then purſue the dictates of cool reaſon." This I wrote firſt in Engliſh, and then in the Doorpt Swangeantine tongue; and having read it twice or thrice over, I went for water and fiſh, and returned before the family were up.

I took care to-day alſo that the officers ſhould be as well ſerved as poſſible, and where an accommodation muſt be wanting, I rather choſe to let it fall on my father, than on them; for I had ever obſerved it to be an eaſier thing to ſatisfy the maſter than the man; as the maſter weighs circumſtances, and from a natural complaiſancy in himſelf, puts a humane conſtruction upon that error or omiſſion, which the ſervant wholly attributes to ſlight and neglect.

My company being abroad, about the time I expected their return, I dreſſed myſelf as the day before, only without my cloak, and in a black bob-wig, and took a turn to meet them.

Pendlehamby ſpying me firſt among the trees, daughter Youwarkee, ſays he, you have a huſband I think for every day in the week; who is this, my ſon Peter; Why he is not the ſame man he was yeſterday. She told him, ſhe had heard me ſay, we changed our apparel almoſt every day in England; nay, ſometimes twice or thrice the ſame day. What, ſays Pendlehamby, are they ſo miſchievous there, they are fearful of

being known in the latter, by thoſe who ſaw them in the former part of the day?

BY this time I was come up, and after paying due compliments, ſays Youwarkee, my father did not know you, my dear, you are ſo altered in your other wig; and I told him in your country, they not only change wigs, but their whole cloathing, two or three times a day ſometimes. Son, ſays my father, if it be ſo, I cannot gueſs at the deſign of a man's making himſelf unlike himſelf. O ſir, ſays I, it is owing to the different functions he is to perform that day: As ſuppoſe, in the morning he is to purſue buſineſs with his inferiors, or meet at our coffee-houſes to chat over the news of the day: He appears in a light eaſy habit, proper for diſpatch, and comes home dirty. Then, perhaps, he is to dine with a friend at mid-day; before whom, for reſpect ſake, not chooſing to be ſeen in his dirty dreſs, he puts on ſomething handſomer, and after ſpending ſometime there, he has, it may be, an appointment at court, a play, or with his miſtreſs; in all which laſt caſes, if he has any thing better than ordinary, it is a part of good breeding to appear in that: But if the very beſt was to be uſed in common, it might ſoon become the worſt, and not fit for a nice man to ſtir abroad in. The different cuſtoms of countries, you have told me of, ſays my father, is ſurprizing. Here are we born with our cloaths on, which always fit, be we ever ſo ſmall or large; nay, are never the worſe for conſtant wearing; and you muſt be eternally altering and changing colour, ſhape, and habit: But, ſays he, where do they get all theſe things? Does every man make juſt what he likes? No, ſays I, there are a particular ſet of men whoſe buſineſs it is to make for all the reſt. What,

ſays he, I ſuppoſe their laſks [ſlaves] make them? No ſir, they are ſilgays, [freemen] ſays I. It is their trade, they do it for a livelihood, being paid by them they work for. A ſuit of theſe cloaths, ſays I, taking up the flap of my coat, will coſt what we call twelve or fourteen pounds in money. I do not underſtand you, ſays he. Why ſir, ſays I, that is as much as will provide one moderate man with all the neceſſary things of life for two months. Then, ſays he, theſe nice men muſt be very rich. No ſir, ſaid I, there you are under a miſtake, for if a man very rich, and who is known to be ſo, neglects his habit, it is taken to be his choice; but one who is not known to be rich, and is really not ſo, is by appearing gay ſometimes thought to be ſo; for he comes little abroad, and pinches miſerably at home; firſt to get that gay ſuit, and then acts on the ſame part to preſerve it; till ſome lucky hit may help him to the means of getting another; as it frequently happens by a good marriage; for though he is but ſeldom ſeen in public, yet always appearing ſo fine when he is, the ladies, whoſe fancies are frequently more tickled with ſhew than ſenſe, admitting him only at firſt as a companion, are at laſt, if worth any thing, taken in the toils he is ever ſpreading for them; and becoming his wife, produce a ſtanding fund to make him a rich man in reality, which he but perſonated before.

PENDLEHAMBY could not well underſtand all I ſaid; and I found by him that all the riches they poſſeſſed, were only food and ſlaves; and as I found afterwards, when amongſt them, they know the want of nothing elſe: But I am afraid I have put them upon another way of thinking, though I aimed at what we call civilizing of them.

CHAP. IV.

Quangrallort arrives with the Colambs; ſtreightened for accommodation; remove to the tent; Youwarkee not known; Peter relates part of his travels; diſpute about the beaſt-fiſh ſkins.

SLEEPING longer than uſual, I was awakened next morning by a gripſack from Quangrallort; upon hearing of which I rouſed immediately, thinking they were at my door; but the meſſenger told me they could not be there in what I underſtood by his ſigns to be about two hours; for they have no ſuch meaſure for time as hours: So I dreſſed at leiſure, and then went to Youwarkee and waked her; Youwee, ſays I, your brother will be here preſently, and I having a mind you ſhould appear as my countrywoman, would have you dreſs yourſelf.

WE walked down to the level, and but juſt ſaved our diſtance, for the van of them were within the arkoe before we arrived, and with ſuch a train after them as ſeemed to reach the whole length of the arkoe. The regularity and order of their flight was admirable, and the break of the trumpets ſo great, ſounding all the way they came, (for we had not only one ſet of them, but at leaſt thirty, there being ſo many Colambs and petty princes in the train, each with fifty attendants,) that I wondered how they could bear it. As the principals alighted, which was at leaſt an hundred paces from me, the gripſacks ſtill kept wing, ſounding as long as we ſtayed.

THIS was a very tedious ceremony, for the guards alighting with their Colambs, ranged juſt as Pendlehamby's had done, but reached as far as the eye could ſee. As they moved towards us, Youwarkee and I having ſtood ſtill ſome time, moved ſlowly forward to meet them.

IT would have ſurprized you to have ſeen the difference they paid us; and I believe the guards took us for ſomething above the mortal race. Youwarkee ſhewed no part of her graundee, having her ſleeves down to her wriſts, white ſilk ſtockings, and red heeled ſhoes, ſo that none of them knew her for one of them.

THE firſt that we met was my brother, to whom we had only an opportunity to pay our reſpects *en paſſant*, before another grandee came up, who was ſucceeded by another and another, to the number of thirty; ſome out of reſpect to my father and brother, and ſome out of mere curioſity to ſee me; and as faſt as each had paid his ſalutes, he paſſed us, till we found we had no more to meet; when we turned about, and fell in with the company.

WHEN we came to the grotto, I was very much put to it for room, we ſcarce being able to ſtand upright by each other, much leſs to ſit down, which my father perceiving, my dear friends, ſays he, had my ſon known in time of ſo much good company, he would have been better provided with ſeats for us all, but conſidering all we ſee is only the labour of his own hands, we ſhould rather admire at the many conveniences we ſee here, than be uneaſy there are no more: And ſon, ſays he, as we are now ſo large a body, I propoſe that we adjourn to the officers quarters, and let them take

ours. I returned my father thanks for the hint, and led the way, the reſt following, where we found room enough and to ſpare.

THOUGH Youwarkee was with us all dinner time, helping the gueſts, we had no ſooner done, but ſays Quangrallort aloud, brother Peter, are we not to ſee my ſiſter? I not hearing perfectly what he ſaid, though I perceived he ſpoke to me, ſir, ſays I. My ſiſter Youwarkee, ſays he, why will not ſhe appear? here are ſeveral of her good friends, as well as myſelf, will be glad to ſee her. My father then laughed ſo heartily, that the reſt taking notice of it, my poor brother was put to the bluſh. Son ſays my, father do you not know your own ſiſter? We have not ſeen her yet, ſays one of the Colambs, or any lady but your daughter Hallycarnie, and that attendant. My brother then ſeeing how it was, came up to ſalute my wife, but even then had his ſcruples, till he ſaw her ſmile, and then begged pardon for his overſight, as did all the Colambs, upon ſaluting her; my brother declaring, that as ſhe was ſomewhat behind me on the level, he had only paid her the reſpect of his chin, taking her for ſome one attending me. The Colamb following my brother, aſſured her the little regard ſhewed her by Quangrallort, who he thought ſhould know beſt where to beſtow his reſpects, was the reaſon of his taking no more notice of her; and each confeſſing his miſtake aroſe from too nearly copying the ſteps of his immediate predeceſſor, they all made excuſe, and the miſtake made us very merry, till they propoſed taking a turn in the woods, it being a great novelty to them they ſaid; but I begged they would leave me behind to prepare for their return.

HAVING refreſhed themſelves after they came home, Quangrallort, being put upon it by ſome of the Colambs, told me I could not render a more acceptable favor to the whole company, than to relate to them an account of my adventures; for though, ſays he, I told them laſt night what I remembered to have heard from you; yet the variety was ſo great, I could not deliver the facts in order as I heard them, but was obliged to take here a piece, and there another, as they occurred to me, making rather ſeveral ſtories of it, than a continual ſeries of facts.

ALL the Colambs immediately ſeconded the motion, and deſired me to begin. I then ordered a clear table and a bowl of punch, and having drank all the company's healths, began my narration, hoping to have finiſhed it before bed-time; but they preſſing me to be very particular, and frequently one or other requiring explanations upon particular facts, and then one making a remark upon ſomething, which another anſwering, and a third replying to, they got the talk out of my hands ſo long, that having loſt themſelves in the argument, and forgot what I ſaid laſt, they begged my pardon, and deſired me to go on: When one, who in contemplation of one fact had loſt beſt part of another, prayed me to go on from ſuch an incident, and another from one before that, ſo that I was frequently obliged to begin half way back again. This method not only ſpun out my ſtory to a very great length, but inſtead of its being finiſhed that evening, as I had purpoſed, it was ſcarce well begun before bed-time drew on: So I juſt having brought them to Angola, told them as it grew late, if they pleaſed, I would finiſh the remainder next night, which they agreed to.

QUANGRALLORT then asked my father if he had been fishing since he came, but he told him he knew not what he meant. Then all the company desired I would shew them what that was I told them they might command me as they pleased; so we appointed the next morning for that exercise; but gentlemen, says I, your lodging to-night gives me the greatest pain, for I know not what I shall do about that. I have a few beast-fish skins which are very soft and hairy, but not a sufficiency for so many friends as I would at present be proud to oblige; but I can lay them as far as they will go upon as much dry reeds and grass as you please. I then sent a servant to Youwarkee for the skins, after which they one and all crying out, if they had but good dry reeds, they desired no better lodging; I dispatched hands to bring away a large parcel of them to the tent, which they did in a trice. Then waiting on those few who lay at the grotto to their quarters, and having sent Youwarkee to her sister, I returned to the tent, to take up my own lodging with those I had left there.

I HAD not yet entered the tent, when I heard a perfect tumult within, every one talking so loud, and all together, that I verily thought they had fallen out, and were going to handy-cuffs; however, I resolved to go in amongst them and try to compose their difference; when just entering, and they spyed me, several ran to me with each a skin in his hand, the rest following as fast as they could. Gentlemen, says I, I hoped to have found you all at rest. So we should have been, says one of them, but for these what you call 'ems. It is my unspeakable misfortune, says I, that I have no more at your service, and am sorry I should cause them to be brought, since each of you cannot have one. Says one

of them, I do not want one, I have ſeen enough of it. Then, gentlemen, ſays I, it is poſſible there may be ſo many more of that Colamb's mind, that there may be ſufficient for thoſe who deſire them. They neither knew what to make of me, or I of them, all this while; till an old Colamb perceiving our miſtake, Mr Peter, ſays he, we have only had a diſpute——I am ſorry at my heart for it, ſays I, but I perceived you were very warm before I entered, and am in great hopes of compromiſing matters to all your ſatisfactions. I was going, ſays the ſame Colamb, to tell you we had a diſpute about what theſe things were, nothing elſe. I was then ſtruck all on a heap, being quite aſhamed they ſhould think I ſuſpected they had been quarrelling for the ſkins, and how to come off I knew not. You will excuſe me ſir, ſays I, for expreſſing a concern that you could not each have one to examine into at the ſame time, that one of you need not have waited to make your remarks till the other had done. No occaſion, no occaſion for that, Mr Peter, ſaid they all together; we ſhall have leiſure enough to examine them to-morrow, but we want to know what they are, and where they grow. Gentlemen, ſays I, each of theſe is the cloathing of a particular fiſh. And where do they grow? ſaid they; In the lake, ſaid I, they are a living creature, who inhabit that great water; I often catch them when I am fiſhing, the ſame exerciſe we ſhall go upon to-morrow.

I had much ado to perſuade them they did not grow on trees, which I was then much more ſurprized at than ſome time after, that I returned their viſit: But having ſatisfied them, and given them ſome poſſible hopes they might ſee one alive next day, they were very well contented, and we all lay down to reſt.

CHAP. V.

Go a fiſhing; catch a beaſt-fiſh; afraid of the gun; how Peter altered his net; a fiſh-dinner for the guards; method of dreſſing and eating it.

I APPEARED before them in the morning in my old jacket, and an old hat with brims indented almoſt to the crown, a flannel nightcap, and checkered ſhirt. How now ſon? ſays my father, what have we here? Sir, ſays I, this will ſhew you the uſe of our Engliſh faſhion I mentioned the other day, and the neceſſity of it. You ſee me in this indifferent habit, becauſe my next buſineſs requires it; but when I come back and have no further dirty-work to do, I ſhall then dreſs, as near as I can, to qualify me for your company.

ARE you for moving gentlemen? ſays my brother, I believe it is time: They then all ariſing, we went to the lake; where getting into my boat, and telling them that any ſix of them might go with me, they never having ſeen ſuch a thing before, and not much liking the looks of it, all made excuſes; till my brother aſſuring them it was very ſafe, and that he had ſailed in it the laſt trip, three or four of them, with my father and Hallycarnie, who was very deſirous of ſeeing me fiſh, got in; and we ſailed a great way up the lake, taking my gun as uſual with me.

IT gave me exceeding delight to ſee the whole body of the people then in the arkoe on the graundee; ſome hovering over our heads, and talking with us; others flying this way, others that, till I had pitched upon a

ſpot to begin my operation; when rowing to ſhore, and quitting my boat, the whole body of people ſettled juſt by me, ſtaring at me and my net, and wondering what I was doing. I then taking a ſweep as uſual, got ſome of the ſoldiers to aſſiſt me to ſhore with it, but when the cod of the net landed, and the fiſh began to daſh with their tails at the water's edge, away ran all my ſoldiers, frightened out of their wits to think what was coming: But it being a large hale, and a ſhelving bank, I could not lift it to the level myſelf, which my brother, who had ſeen the ſport before, perceiving, though not one of the reſt ſtirred, lent me a hand, and we got it up.

You cannot imagine what ſurprize appeared in every face on my opening the net; and ſeeing all the fiſh naked; they drew up by degrees cloſer and cloſer, for I let the fiſh lie ſome time for their obſervation; but ſeeing the large fiſh, upon my handling them, flap their tails, they very expeditiouſly retired again. I then toſſed ſeveral of them into the boat, but two of them being very large, and rough-ſcaled ugly fiſh, I did not think I could lift them myſelf, ſo deſired aſſiſtance, but no body ſtirred; I expected ſome of the Colambs would have ordered their men to have helped me, but they were ſo terrified at ſeeing me handle them, that they could not have the conſcience to order their men on ſo ſevere a duty, till a common man came to me, and taking the tail and I the head, we toſſed them both into the boat.

I went higher up the lake than uſual, in hopes of a beaſt-fiſh to ſhew them, but though I could not meet with one, I had ſeveral very great hales, and took three or four of my lobſters very large ones. This was the ſe-

cond trial I had made of my net ſince I had altered it, and gave me great ſatisfaction; for I could now take as many fiſh at one draught, as I could before have done at ten; I had found that though my net was very long, yet for want of a bag, or cod to incloſe the fiſh, many that were included within its compaſs would, whilſt I drew round, ſwim to the extremes, and ſo get out, for want of ſome inlet to enter at; for which reaſon, I ſawed off the top of a tree, at about ten feet from the ground, and drawing a circle of ſix feet diameter round the tree, on the ground, I ſtuck it round with ſmall pegs, at two inches diſtance; then I drove the like number of nails round the top of the trunk of the tree, and ſtraining a length of matline from each peg on the ground to a correſpondent nail on the tree, I tied my matline in circles round the ſtrained lines, from top to bottom, about two inches diſtance at the bottom, but at a leſs diſtance where the ſtrained lines grew nearer to each other towards the top; and having ſecured all the ends by ſome line twiſted round them, I cut a hole in the middle of my net, and tied the large ground end over the hole in the net, and gathering the ſmall end up in a purſe, tying it up tight; and by this means, I now ſcarce loſt any fiſh which once were within the ſweep of my net.

HAVING had ſo good ſucceſs I had a deſign of returning; but thought as I could now ſo eaſily entertain a multitude, I might as well take another hale or two, and make an handſome treat for the ſoldiery: Then coming up to my drill's mouth, I fixed my implements for a draft there, and beginning to draw up, I found great reſiſtance in the net, and got two or three to help me; but coming near ſhore, when the company ſaw the net tumble and roll, riſe and fall, they all ran as if they

were mad, till I called them, and told the Colambs it was only one of the fiſh whoſe ſkins I had ſhewn them; upon which, by that time I had diſcharged the fiſh from the net, they were all round me again. But no ſooner had he got looſe, than up he roſe, whirled his wings, and at the ſame inſtant uttered ſuch a groan, that my whole company retreated again, thinking me ſomewhat more than a man, who could face ſo dreadful an enemy. I intreated them to come and view it; but finding no arguments could bring them nearer, I edged round till I got him between me and the water, and ſhot him dead.

Upon the report of my gun, the whole field was in the air, darting and ſcreaming, as I have often ſeen a flight of rooks do on the ſame occaſion; and I am apt to believe ſome of them never returned again, but went directly home.

I was a little concerned to ſee the confuſion I had cauſed; and laying down my gun, my brother, who though at a diſtance when I ſhot, knowing what I was at, and coming up to me, it put the reſt upon their conſideration, and they alighted one by one at a diſtance, till they were all on the level again.

My father and the Colambs, who were the firſt that durſt approach, wondered what I had done, and how the fiſh came to be dead, and whence ſo much fire and ſmoke proceeded, for they were ſure I brought none with me, and aſked abundance of queſtions: But as I knew I muſt have occaſion for anſwering to the ſame thing twenty times over, had I entered upon an explanation there, I deferred giving them ſatisfaction till we came home; when all at once might be capable of

hearing what was ſaid. So I told them the moſt neceſſary thing at peſent was to ſtow the fiſh in the boat; for it was the largeſt I had ever taken, and I could not wholly do it myſelf. I made ſeveral efforts for help, but in vain, till the ſame ſoldier who had helped me with one of the firſt fiſh came to my relief, and deſired my orders what to do, aſſiſted me, and the reſt ſeeing the difficulty we both had to manage it, one or two more of them coming up, we ſhipped it on board.

I THEN called the Colambs to me, telling them I was ſorry I had given ſuch a general diſturbance to them, by ſhooting the fiſh; but as they kept at too great a diſtance from me to have notice of my deſign, and if I had followed them the fiſh might have eſcaped before my return, I was obliged to do as I did, which was without any poſſibility of hurting them: But as I had given them ſuch a fright, I hoped they would this one day give me an opportunity of complimenting their guards with a fiſh dinner, if we could any way contrive to dreſs it, for whoever did that muſt be able to bear the cloſe light of a large fire. They all ſhook their heads but my brother, who told me he had in his retinue ſix men from mount Alkoe, [a burning mountain] purpoſely retained for their ſtrong ſight, to attend him always to Craſhdoorpt; who he believed for the benefit of the reſt would undertake the cookery, if I would ſhew them how. I deſired he would give them orders to attend me on the other ſide the lake, and I would inſtruct them at my landing, and then I croſſed over with my booty.

FINDING the mount Alkoe men waiting for my landing, I aſked them if they could bear the ſight of fire. They told me they were uſed to much greater

light and flames than I had ever ſeen they believed. Very good, ſaid I, then three of you get into my boat and hand out that fiſh to the ſhore. I found they were more afraid of the fiſh than of the fire, for not one of them ſtirred till I got in and toſſed out ſeveral ſmall ones; and then taking up a large one, help me ſome body ſays I, they looking a little at one another, till one of them venturing to take it, the reſt fell heartily to work, and diſpatched the whole lading preſently. I then laid a ſmall parcel upon my cart, for our own eating and the officers, and ſending them to the grotto, I gave the cooks their charge.

Now, ſays I, my lads, do you ſerve all the reſt of the fiſh as I do this, cutting it open at the ſame time, and throwing away the guts, and I will ſend each of you ſuch an inſtrument as I uſe here, pointing to my knife. I ſhall order ſix large heaps of wood to the level to be piled up there: when you have done the fiſh, do you ſet fire to the heaps, and let them burn till the flame is over, and the coals are clear, then lay on your fiſh, and if any are too large to be managable, cut them in proper pieces, and with ſticks, which I will ſend you, turn them over and over, walking round the fire, and with the forked end of the ſtick toſs the leaſt off firſt, and afterwards the greater; but be ſure you throw the fiſh as far as ever you can from the fire amongſt the men, that they may not be obliged to come too near it; and in this manner go on, till either they have enough, or your fiſh are gone; and when you have done, come to the grotto for your reward.

I THEN ſet abundance of hands to work to carry wood, to be laid in ſix heaps, two hundred paces from each other, and told them how to pile it. I then pre-

pared ſix long taper ſticks with forked ends, and ordered more hands to divide the fiſh equally to the piles. I ſent others with ſalt and bread, and I ordered them to let me know when all was ready.

WHILE theſe preparations were making my tent viſitors had all dined, and my cart had returned with the beaſt-fiſh, which the company deſired might be brought in; when every one paſſed his judgment upon it, and a long diſſertation we had on the marvellous works of Collwarr. I let them go on with their ſhow, though I could have diſproved moſt of their concluſions, from the little knowledge I had of things, but I never was knight-errant enough to oppoſe my ſentiments to a multitude already prepoſſeſſed on the other ſide of the queſtion; for this reaſon, becauſe I have ever obſerved that where ſeveral have imbibed the ſame ridiculous principle in infancy, they never want arguments though ever ſo ridiculous to ſupport it: And as no one can deſert it without impeaching the judgment of the reſt, they encourage each other in their obſtinacy, and quite out-vote a ſingle perſon; and then the laugh beginning on the ſtrongeſt ſide, nothing is ſo difficult as to get it out of their hands; but when a ſingle man in the wrong hears a juſt argument from a ſingle antagoniſt, which he cannot contradict, he imbibes its force; and whilſt that laſts, as nothing but a better argument with better reaſons, can remove it, he from thenceforth adopts his adverſary's reaſons for his own, to oppoſe againſt his own former opinion.

IN the height of our diſputations on the beaſt-fiſh, came news that the broil was going to begin, and as I expected very good diverſion at it, I invited the company to go ſee it, telling them in my opinion it would exceed the ſport in taking them. We paſſed through

the wood till we came amongſt the ſhrubs, where I placed them to be out of harm's way, and the fire, which was now nothing but cinders, was of no inconvenience to them. They were pleaſed with it to perfection; for firſt, the ſix men who walked round the fires, by the glowing light of the embers and the ſhining of their graundees, looked like men on fire; then to ſee each fire ſurrounded with a circle of men, at the diameter of near two hundred paces, as cloſe as they could well ſtand, by a more diſtant ſhine of the fire, had a very pleaſant effect; but when the broilers began to throw the fiſh about, for each man ſtood with ſome ſalt and a cut of bread in his hand, to ſee a body of an hundred men running for it, and whilſt they were ſtooping and ſcrambling for that, to ſee a hot fiſh fall on the back of one, which was whipped off by another, who ſcalding his mouth with it, threw it in the face of a third, when a fourth, fifth, and ſixth pulling it in pieces ran away with it; and to ſee the different poſtures, courſes, and groups during this exerciſe and running-feaſt, was the moſt agreeable farce my gueſts had ever ſeen in their lives; and to the great ſaving of my liquors, kept us in the wood for full three hours, not a ſoul ſtirring till the feaſt was over.

We ſpent beſt part of this evening in diſcourſe on the paſſages of the day, the reflections on which not being concluded till bed-time, my adventures were poſtponed till the next night, but we had firſt concluded on a ſhooting for the next morning, for they were all extremely deſirous of knowing how I did it, at a time they ſhould have opportunity of ſeeing me, and making remarks; and I being unwilling they ſhould think me a conjurer, agreed to make them maſters of part of the myſtery of powder and ball.

CHAP. VI.

A ſhooting propoſed; all afraid of the gun but one private guard; his behaviour; Pendlehamby, at Peter's requeſt, makes him a general; Peter's diſcourſe thereon; Remainder of his ſtory; the Colambs return.

THIS being the fifth morning, I cleaned my beſt gun, and prepared my balls, and we all took a walk towards the bridge, every one admiring my gun, as we went; but I could get no one to carry it, and we had at leaſt five hundred queſtions propoſed about it, I told them they need not be afraid of it, for it was only wood and iron; but they knew nothing of iron. I then ſhewed them how I made it give fire, by ſnaping the cock; they thought it was very ſtrange. I then put a little powder in the pan, they would not be perſuaded but I had taken away the powder, before the flaſh, or elſe they ſaid it was impoſſible that it ſhould be all gone upon flaſhing only; for they ſaid it was a little nut, uſing the ſame word to expreſs both nut and ſeed. I then deſired one of them to put in ſome powder, and ſnap it himſelf; but having prevailed with him to try the experiment, if I had not through caution held my hand upon the barrel, the gun had been on the ground; for the moment it flaſhed, he let it go, and ran for it.

I HAD a great inclination to gain the better of their prejudices, and uſed abundance of arguments to prove the gun as innocent a thing as a twig I took up; and that it was the powder, which when ſet on fire, the flame thereof wanting more room than the powder itſelf did, forced itſelf, and all that oppoſed it, out of the mouth of the gun, with ſuch fury as to make the noiſe they heard; and being juſt come to the rock,

now, says I, you shall see what I tell you is true; now observe, I put in thus much powder only, and with this rag I stop it down close. Now says I, you see by the length of this stick, that the rag and powder take up the space only of a finger's depth on the inside of the gun. They saw that plainly they said, but how could that kill any thing? Now look again, says I, I put in a little more powder, as I did before when I made a flash, and you see there is a little hole from this powder through the side of the gun to the powder within. Do you observe that this communicates with that, through this hole? Yes, they said, they did. Now says I, when I put fire to this, it sets fire to that within; which fire, turning to flame, and wanting room, bursts out at the mouth of the gun: And to shew you with what force it comes out, here handle this round ball, giving them a bullet to handle; you feel how heavy it is; now can any of you throw this ball as far as that rock? for I stood a good hundred paces from it. They told me no. And do not you think, says I, that if the force of the fire made by this powder can throw this ball to that rock, that force much be very great? They said they thought it much, but believed it to be impossible. But, says I, if it not only throws it to the rock, but beats out a piece of the stone, must not that be much more violent? They agreed it much. Then putting in the ball, now says I, we will try. I then ordered one to daub a part of the rock, about breast high, with some mud, and first to observe about it if the rock was any where fresh broken or not; who returning, reported that the rock was all of a colour and sound, but somewhat ragged about the mud. Did you lay the mud on smooth? says I, He replied yes. Then lifting up my gun, I perceived they were creeping off; so I took it down again, and call-

ing, reaſoned with them upon their fears. What miſchief ſays I, can you apprehend from this gun in my hand? Should I be able to hurt you with it, are you not all my friends or relations, could I be willing to do it? If the gun of itſelf could hurt, would I handle it as I do? For ſhame, be more courageous, rouſe your reaſon, and ſtand by me; I ſhall take care not to hurt you; it looks as if you miſtruſted my love to you; for this gun can do nothing but what I direct it to.

By ſuch purſuaſions, rough and ſmooth, I prevailed upon the major part of the Colambs and officers to ſtand near me to ſee me fire; and then I ſhot; but though my words had engaged them to ſtand it, I had no ſooner ſnapped, but the graundees flew all open, though they cloſed again immediately; and then we fell to queſtion and anſwer again. I deſired them to walk to the rock, and ſent the perſon who put up the mark before, to ſee, and ſhew us exactly what alteration there was; he told us there was a round hole in the mud, pointing to it, which he did not leave there, and taking away the mud, a thick ſhiver of the rock followed it. They then all agreed, that the ball muſt have made both the hole in the mud, and alſo ſplintered the rock; and ſtood in amaze at it, not being able to comprehend it: But by all the art I had I could not prevail with a man of them to fire the gun himſelf, till it had been buzzed about a good while, and at laſt it came to my ears, that a common ſoldier behind ſaid he ſhould not be afraid of it, if the gentleman would ſhew him now.

I THEN ordered the fellow to me, and he told me, with a compoſed look, that it had always been his way of thinking, that what he ſaw another do, he could do himſelf, and could not reſt till he had tried: And

ſir ſays he, if this gun as you call it, does not hurt you, why ſhould it hurt me? And if you can make it hit that rock, why ſhould not I, when you have told me how you manage it? Are not you the man that firſt helped me up with the large fiſh yeſterday? ſays I. He told me he was.

I WAS prodigiouſly pleaſed with the fellow's ſpirit, and ſays I, my friend if you will, and I live, you ſhall hit it before you have done. I then ſhewed him the ſight of the gun, and how to hold it; and being perfect in that, now ſays I, ſhut your left eye, and obſerve with your right, till this knob and that notch are exactly even with each other, and the middle of that mark, and when they are ſo, pull this bit with your fore-finger, holding the gun tight to your ſhoulder. He ſo exactly purſued my directions, that he hit the very middle of the mud; and then, without any emotion, walked up with the gun in his hand, as I had done before; and turning to me very gravely, ſir, ſays he, it is hit. I told him the beſt markſman on earth could not be ſure of coming ſo near his mark. He ſtroked his chin, and giving me the gun again, was walking to his place, but I ſtopped him, and ſeeing ſomething ſo modeſt and ſincere in his countenance and behaviour, and ſo generous in his ſpirit, I aſked him to which Colamb he belonged. He told me to Colamb Pendlehamby. To my father? ſays I, then ſure I ſhall not be denied.

I TOOK him with me to my father, who was not yet come up to the rock. Sir ſays I, there is a favour I would beg of you. Son, ſays he, what is it you can aſk that I can refuſe you? Says I, ſir, this man belongs to your guards; now there is ſomething ſo noble and daring in his ſpirit, and yet ſo meek and deſerv-

ing in his deportment, that if you will load me with an obligation it is to make him an officer: He is not deſerving of ſo ill a ſtation as a private man.

My father looking at me, ſon, ſays he, there is ſomething to be done before he can be qualified for what you require. This thinks I is a put off. Pray ſir, ſays I, what can a man of courage, ſenſe, and a cool temper want to qualify him for what I ask? Something, ſays he, which none but myſelf can give; and that, at your deſire, I will ſupply him with. Then my father calling him, Laſk Naſgig bonyoe, ſays he, that is, Slave Naſgig lie down. Naſgig, for that was his name, immediately fell on his face, with his arms and hands ſtrait by his ſides; when my father ſetting his left foot on Naſgig's neck, pronounced theſe words, Laſk I give thee life, thou art a filgay. Then Naſgig raiſing himſelf on his knees, made obeiſance to my father, and ſtanding up ſtroked his chin; and my father taking him by the hand in token of equality, the ceremony ceaſed.

Now ſon, ſays my father, let me hear your requeſt? It is only ſir, ſaid I, preferment for the deſerving equal to his merit. My father aſked him if he underſtood the duty of a gorpel, [a ſort of enſign.] He did not reply yes, but beginning, gave a compendious ſort of hiſtory of his whole duty; at which all the Colambs were very much ſurpriſed; for even his comrades were not apprized, or ever imagined he knew more of military affairs than themſelves. My father then aſked him if he knew how to behave as a cluff [captain]; but he made as little difficulty of that as the other, going through the ſeveral parts of duty in all the different branches, in peace and war, at home and abroad.

Son, says my father, it is a mystery to me, you should have found out more in an hour, than I myself could in half an age; for this man was born in my paláng [town], of my own lask, and has been mine and my father's these forty years. I shall be glad if you will look on the rest of my lasks, and give me your opinion; I may have more as deserving. I told him, such as Nasgig were not to be met with very often; and when they were found, ought to be cherished accordingly.

Sir, says I, nature works upon the same sort of materials divers ways; on some in sport and some in earnest; and if the necessary qualifications of a great man are impressed on our mass, it is odds but we improve regularly into one, though it may never be publicly known, or even to ourselves, till a proper occasion: For as a curious genius will be most inquisitive after, and is in the end most retentive of knowledge, so no man is less ostentatious of it. He covets knowledge, not from the prospect of gain, but merely for its own sake, the very knowing being his recompence: And if I may presume to give you a hint how properly to bestow your favors, let it be on persons like this; for the vain knowing man, who is always shewing it, as he for the most part labours for it to shew out with, and procure his rise by it, were it not for the hopes of that, would not think knowledge worth attaining; and as his rise is his aim, if he could invent any other more expeditious method than that, he would not pretermit any ill act that might advance him according to his lust of rising. But the man who aims at perfection from his natural inclination, must, to attain his ends, avoid all ill courses, as impediments to that perfection he lusts after: And that, by Nasgig's worth being so little known, I will answer for it, is his character. And this being true,

yourſelf will adduce the conſequence, which is the fitter man to bear place; for with me it is a maxim, He who labours after truth for truth's ſake, and that he ſurely muſt who propoſes no worldly view in it, cannot arrive at his ends by falſe methods; but is always the trueſt friend to himſelf and others, the truſtieſt ſubject to his lord, and the moſt faithful ſervant to his God.

MY father then turning to me, ſon, ſays he, you have enlightened me more than ever I was before, and have put me on a new way of thinking, for which I am to return you many thanks, and the whole company doing the ſame; ſays my father, I loſt a brave general officer lately, who was deſtined to the weſtern wars which are breaking out, and have been long debating in my mind to whom I ſhould commit his corps; and but for the hazard of the enterprize, I would have now given it to Naſgig; but ſhall be loth to loſe him ſo ſoon after I am acquainted with his worth, ſo will think of ſome other poſt nearer my perſon for him, leſs dangerous, though perhaps not ſo honourable.

GREAT ſir, ſays Naſgig, I am too ſenſible of the honour already done me, to think any poſt wherein I may continue to ſerve you either too mean, or too hazardous for me: And as valour is no where ſo conſpicuous as in the greateſt dangers, I ſhall eſteem my blood ſpent to great advantage in any enterprize where my duty under your command leads me; I therefore the rather humbly requeſt this dangerous poſt, that I may either loſe my life in your ſervice, or ſee you juſtified in your advancement of me, by the whole nation. For how can I demonſtrate my affection to your perſon and pleaſure in an inactive ſtate?

HERE the whole level rang with applauſe to Naſgig.

MY father then giving his hand to Naſgig in token of friendſhip, and his word for inveſtiture in the command of that vacant poſt, the whole level again reſounded with long live Pendlehamby and his ſervant Naſgig.

THIS being the laſt day of my company's ſtay, for they had agreed to go homewards next morning, ſome of them moved to return the ſooner, that they might have time to hear out my ſtory. So that our ſtay was very little longer.

IN our return home Naſgig ſingled me out, to return his acknowledgments for my favor, and viewing my gun, told me they had no ſuch thing growing in his country. I told him if he had it would do no good without my powder. I then at his requeſt deſcribed what I had heard of our method of fighting in battle in Europe; and, mentioning our cannon, he ſaid he ſuppoſed they killed every man they hit. No, ſays I, not ſo bad as that; ſometimes they hit the fleſh only, and that is commonly cured; ſometimes break a leg or arm, and that may in time be cured, ſome ſo well as to be uſefull again, and others are cut off, and healed up again; but if the ball hits the head or vitals, it is commonly mortal. O, ſays he, give me the head or vitals then, no broken limbs for me.

AFTER dinner, at their requeſt, I went on with my ſtory, at repairing the caſtle, and my eſcape with Glaulepſe, and ſo on to the crocodile; when I repeated his ſpeech to me on that account, and told them it had made ſuch an impreſſion upon me, that I had endea-

voured to make it the leading thought of my mind, and had ſet it down upon one of my doors at the grotto, that it might the oftener be in my ſight when any difficulty ſhould ariſe.

ONE of the Colambs begged pardon for interrupting, but told me, though he underſtood what Glaulepſe meant, he could not tell how I could ſet what he ſaid down at my grotto, or have it in my ſight, and deſired me to explain that. I would have told my gueſt I took it down in writing, if that would not have puzzled the cauſe more; but to go the neareſt way I could, I told him we had a method in my country, of conveying to a man at a geat diſtance whatever we have a mind to ſay to him; and in ſuch a manner, that no body but himſelf would know what we would have him know. And pauſing here a little, to conſider the eaſieſt method of demonſtrating this to their ſenſes, they told me, they had gone as far as their conjectures could carry them, but could conclude on nothing ſo probable as ſending it by a meſſenger. I told them that was in part my way; but my meſſenger ſhould not know the meſſage he carried. That gravelled them quite, and they were unanimous that was what could not be done. By this time I had ſent for a wood coal to write with upon my deal table, and kneeling down to the table, I began to write, "Honoured ſir, I ſend this to gain by your anſwer to it, an account of your arrival at Arndrumſtake." I then called them all to me: Now, ſays I ſuppoſe I want to know how my father gets back to Arndrumſtake, my way is this, I ſet down ſo many words as will expreſs my meaning to my father, after the manner you ſee on this table, and make a little diſtance between each word, which is the ſame thing as you do in ſpeaking; for there, if you run one word

into another, and do not give each its proper ſound, who can underſtand you? For though you ſpeak what contains all the words, yet without the proper ſound and diſtinction, it is only confuſion. Do you underſtand that? They told me they did. Then ſays I, theſe are the words I would have my father know, I being at this arkoe, and he at Arndrumſtake. Honoured ſir, and ſo I read on; here ſays I, you muſt take us to be countrymen, and that he and I underſtand both the ſame method. Now look, this word, which ends where you ſee the gap, ſtands for honoured, and this next for ſir, the next for I, and ſo on; and we both uſing the ſame method, and ſeeing each others words, are able to open our minds at a diſtance.——I was now in hopes I had done, and was going on with my ſtory; but, ſays one of the Colambs, Mr Peter, though this is a matter that requires conſideration, I plainly ſee how you do it, by agreeing that all theſe ſtrokes, put into this form, ſhall ſtand for the word honoured, and ſo on, as you ſay, let who will make them; but have not you ſet down there the word Arndrumſtake? Yes, ſays I; why then, ſays he, none of your countrymen could underſtand what that means. No, ſays I, ſmiling, but they could. Says he, you ſay you agree what ſtrokes ſhall ſtand for one word, and what for another, but then how could your countrymen, who never knew what ſtrokes you would ſet down for Arndrumſtake, know that your ſtrokes meant that very country? For that you could not have agreed upon, before either of you knew there was any ſuch place.

I was at a loſs, without ſpending more words than I was willing about it, how to anſwer this cloſe reaſoner; and talking of ſyllables, and letters, would only have perplexed the affair more; ſo I told him the

readieſt for diſpatch, that as every word conſiſted of one or more diſtinct ſounds, and as ſome of the ſame ſounds happened in different words, we did not agree ſo much upon making our ſtrokes ſtand for ſeveral words as for ſeveral ſounds; and thoſe ſounds, more or leſs of them added together, made the particular words. As for example, ſays I, Arn is one ſound, drum is another ſound, and ſtake is another; now by our knowing how to ſet down theſe ſeveral ſounds by themſelves, we can couple them, and apply them to the making up any word in the manner we pleaſe; and therefore he, by ſeeing thoſe three ſounds together, knows I mean Arndrumſtake, and can ſpeak it as well, though he never heard the whole word ſpoke together, as if he heard me ſpeak to him. I have ſome little notion of what you mean, ſays he, but not clear enough to expreſs myſelf upon it; and ſo, go on, go on, and pray what did you do about the reeds?

I THEN reſuming my diſcourſe where I left off, compleated my narration that night; but I could perceive the water in my father's eyes, when I came to the account of Youwarkee's fall, and the condition I took her up in.

WHEN I had done, they adjuſted the order of their flight, for avoiding confuſion, one to go ſo long before another, and the junior Colambs to go firſt.

IN the morning nothing was to be heard but the gripſacks; the men were all ranged in order to go off with their reſpective Colambs; and after all compliments paſſed, the junior Colamb ariſing, walked half way the wood, where his gripſack ſtanding to wait for him, preceded him to the level, the next gripſack

ſtanding ready to ſound as ſoon as the firſt removed; and this was the ſignal for the ſecond Colamb to move; ſo that each Colamb was a quarter of a mile before the other.

My father was the laſt but two; but I ſhall never forget his tenderneſs, at parting with his daughter and grandchildren, and I may ſay with myſelf too; for by this time he had a high opinion of me. Patty went with my father, ſhe ſo much reſembling my wife, that my father ſaid he ſhould ſtill have his two daughters in his ſight, having her with him.

At parting, I preſented Naſgig with a broad ſword, and ſhewing him the uſe of it, with many expreſſions of gratitude on his part, and reſpect on mine, he took flight after the reſt.

CHAP. VII.

Peter finds his ſtores low; ſends Youwarkee to the ſhip; receives an invitation to Georigetti's court.

FOR the firſt few days after our company had left us, Youwarkee could not forbear a tear now and then for the loſs of her father and ſiſter; but I endeavoured not to ſee it, leſt I ſhould by perſuading her to the contrary, ſeem to oppoſe what I really thought was a further token of the ſweetneſs of her diſpoſition; but it wore off by degrees, and having a clear ſtage again, it coſt us ſeveral days to ſettle ourſelves, and put our

confuſed affairs in order; and when we had done, we bleſſed ourſelves that we could come and go, and converſe with the pleaſing tenderneſs we had hitherto always done.

SHE told me, nothing in the world but her concern for ſo tender a father, and the fear of diſpleaſing me if ſhe diſobliged him, ſhould have kept her ſo long from me; for her life had never been ſo ſweet and ſerene as with me and her children; and if ſhe was to begin it again, and chooſe her ſettlement and company, it ſhould be with me in that arkoe. I told her though I was intirely of her opinion for avoiding a life of hurry, yet I loved a little company, if for nothing elſe but to advance topics for diſcourſe, to the exerciſe of our faculties; but I then agreed, it was not from mere judgment I ſpoke, but from fancy. But Youwee, ſays I, it will be proper for us to ſee what our friends have left us, that we do not want before the time comes about again: Then ſhe took her part, and I mine; and having finiſhed, we found they would hold out pretty well, and that the firſt thing to be done, was to get the oil of the heaſt-fiſh.

WHEN we came to examine the brandy and wine, I found they had ſuffered greatly; ſo I told Youwarkee, when ſhe could ſpare time, ſhe ſhould make another flight to the ſhip; and ſays I, pray look at all the ſmall caſks of wine or brandy, or be they what they will, if they are not above half full, or thereabouts they will ſwim, and you may ſend them down. I deſired her to ſend a fire-ſhovel and tongs, deſcribing them to her; and there are abundance of good ropes between decks, rolled up, ſend them, ſays I, and any thing elſe you think we ſhall want, as plates, bowls, and all the cut-

laſſes and piſtols, ſays I, that hang in the room by the cabin: For I would, methinks, have another cargo, as it may poſſibly be the laſt; for the ſhip cannot hold for ever.

YOUWARKEE, who loved a jaunt to the ſhip mightily, ſat very attentive to what I ſaid, and told me if I pleaſed, ſhe would go the next day, to which I agreed.

SHE ſtayed on this trip till I began to be uneaſy for her, being gone almoſt four days, and I was in great fear of ſome accident; but ſhe arrived ſafe, telling me, ſhe had ſent all ſhe could any ways pack up; and any one who had ſeen the arrival of her fleet would have taken it for a good ſhip's cargo, for it coſt me full three weeks to land and draw them up to the grotto; and then we had ſuch a redundancy of things, that we were forced to pile them upon each other, to the top of the room.

IT began to draw towards long days again, when one morning in bed I heard the gripſack. I waked Youwarkee, and told her of it; and we both got up, and were going to the level, when we met ſix glumms in the wood, with a gripſack before them, coming to the grotto. The trumpeter, it ſeems, had been there before; but the others, who ſeemed to be of a better rank, had not. We ſaluted them, and they us; and Youwarkee knowing one of them, we deſired them to walk to the grotto.

THEY told us they came expreſs from Georigetti's palace, with an invitation to me and Youwarkee to ſpend ſome time at his court. I let them know what a misfortune I lay under in not being born with the

graundee, ſince providence had pleaſed to diſpoſe of me in a part of the world where alone it could have been of ſuch infinite ſervice to me; or I ſhould have taken it for the higheſt honour, to have laid myſelf at their maſter's feet: And after ſome other diſcourſe, one of them preſſed me to return his maſter my anſwer; for they had but a very little time to ſtay. I told them they ſaw plainly, by baring my breaſt to them, that I was under an abſolute incapacity for ſuch a journey, and gratifying the higheſt ambition I could have in the world; for I was pinned down to my arkoe, never more to paſs the barrier of that rock. One of them then aſking me if I ſhould chooſe to go if it was poſſible to convey me thither; I told him he could ſcarce have the leaſt doubt, was my ability to perform ſuch a journey equal to my inclination to take it, that I ſhould in the leaſt heſitate at obeying his maſter. Sir, ſays he, you make me very happy, in the regard you ſhew my maſter; and I muſt beg leave to ſtay another day with you. I told him they did me great honour; but little thought what it all tended to.

WE were very facetious; and they talked of the number of viſitors I had here; and they mentioned ſeveral facts which had happened, and amongſt the reſt that of Naſgig, who they ſaid, ſince his return, had been introduced by Pendlehamby to the king, and was, for his great prudence and penetration, become Georigetti's great favorite. They told me war was upon the point of breaking out, and ſeveral other pieces of news, which as they did not concern me, I was very eaſy about.

THE next morning they deſiring to walk and view what was moſt remarkable in my arkoe, and above all

to ſee me fire my gun, which they had heard ſo much of; I gratified them at a mark, and hit the edge of it, and found them quite ſtaunch, without the leaſt ſtart at the report. I paid them a compliment upon it, and told them how their countrymen had behaved, even at a ſecond firing: But, ſays he who was the chief ſpokeſman, and knew I found as much as I could tell him, that ſecond fright was from ſeeing death the conſequence of the firſt; and though you had then to do moſtly with ſoldiers, you muſt not think they chooſe death more than others, though their duty obliges them to ſhun it leſs.

THE ſame perſon then deſired me to ſhew him how to fire the gun; which I did, and believe he might hit the rock ſome where or other; but he did not ſeem to admire the ſport, and I having but few balls left, did not recommend the gun to the reſt.

A LITTLE before bed-time, the ſtrangers told me they believed I ſhould ſee Naſgig next morning. I preſently thought there was ſomewhat more than ordinary in this viſit; but could no ways dive to the bottom of it.

JUST before they went to reſt, they ordered the trumpeter to be early on the rock next morning; and upon the firſt ſight of Naſgig's corps, to ſound notice of it, for us to be ready to receive him.

CHAP. VIII.

Naſgig comes with a guard to fetch Peter; long debate about his going; Naſgig's uneaſineſs at Peter's refuſal; relates a prediction to him, and proceedings thereon at Georigetti's court; Peter conſents to go; prepares a machine for that purpoſe.

WE were waked by the trumpet, giving notice of Naſgig's coming; I did not care to enquire of the ſtranger into the particulars of his embaſſy; for be it what it will, thinks I, Naſgig is ſo much my friend, that I can know the motives of it from him, and, or I am much deceived, he is too honeſt to impoſe upon me. But I had but little time for thought, for upon our entering the level, we found him and his train of at leaſt an hundred perſons, juſt alighting before us.

WE embraced, and profeſſed the particular pleaſure fortune had done us, in once more meeting together. When we arrived at the grotto, he told me he was aſſured I had been informed of the occaſion of his viſit; and that it would be the greateſt honour done to his country that could be imagined. He then laid his hand on my beard, which was now of about five months growth, having never ſhaved it ſince my father went, and told me he was glad to ſee that. And are you not ſo to ſee me, ſays I? Yes ſurely, ſays he, for I prize that for your ſake. But, ſays I, pray be open with me, and tell me what you mean by my being informed of the occaſion of your coming? Why, ſays he, of Georigetti's meſſage to you; as it will be of ſuch infinite ſervice to our country: And ſays he, if you had not con-

ſented to it, the meſſengers had returned and ſtopped me. True, ſays I, one of the meſſengers told me the king would be glad to ſee me; which as I, as well as he, knew it was impoſſible he ſhould, in return to his compliment, I believe I might ſay what a happineſs it would be to me if I could wait on him: But pray what is your immediate meſſage, for I hear you are in great favor at court, and would never have come hither with this retinue and ſo much ceremony on a trifling account.

My dear Peter, ſays Naſgig, know that your fame has reached far and near ſince I ſaw you before; and our ſtate though a large and populous one, and once of mighty power and twice its preſent extent, by the revolt of the weſtern part of it, who choſe themſelves a king, has been ſo miſerably harraſſed by wars, that the revolters, who are ever fomenting diſcontent and rebellion amongſt us, will, by the encroachments they daily make on us, certainly reduce us at laſt to a province under their government; which will render us all ſlaves to an uſurped power, ſet up againſt our lawful ſovereign. Now theſe things were foretold long before they actually began to be tranſacted; but all being then at peace, and no proſpect of what has ſince happened, we looked not out for a remedy till the diſeaſe became ſtubborn and incurable. Pray, ſays I, by whom were the things you mention foretold? By a very ancient and grave ragam, ſays he. How long ago? ſays I. O, above four times the age of the oldeſt man living ſays he. And when did he ſay it would happen? ſays I. That, ſays he, was not quite ſo clear then. But how do you know, ſays I, that he ever ſaid any ſuch thing? Why the thing itſelf was ſo peculiar, ſays he, and the ragam delivered it ſo poſitively, that his ſucceſſors have ever ſince pronounced it twelve times a-year pub-

licly word for word, to put the people in mind of it, and from whom they muſt hope for relief; and now the long expected time being come, we have no hopes but in your deſtruction of the tyrant uſurper. I deſtroy him! ſays I, if he is not deſtroyed till I do it, I fear your ſtate is but in a bad caſe. My good friend Peter, ſays he, you or no body can do it. Pugh, ſays I, Naſgig, I took you for a man of more ſenſe, notwithſtanding the prejudices of education, than to think, becauſe you ſaw me kill a beaſt-fiſh that could not come to hurt me, at the diſtance of twenty paces, that I can kill your uſurper, at the diſtance he is from me. No my good friend, ſays Naſgig, I know you take me to have more judgment than to think ſo. Why, what elſe can I do? ſays I, unleſs he will come hither to be killed by me. Dear Peter, ſays he, you will not hear me out. I will, ſays I, ſay on. You, as I ſaid before, being the only perſon that can, according to our prediction, deſtroy this uſurper, and reſtore peace among us; my maſter Georigetti, and the whole ſtate of Norrunbdſgrſutt, were going to ſend a ſplendid embaſſy to you; but your father adviſing to repoſe the commiſſion wholly in me, they all conſented to it, and I am come to invite you over to Brandleguarp for that purpoſe. I know you will tell me you have not the graundee, and cannot get thither: But I am aſſured you have what is far better; the wiſdom you have will help you to ſurmount that difficulty, which our whole moucherat cannot get over. And I am ſure did you apply half the thought to accompliſh it, you ſeem to do to invent excuſes againſt it, you would eaſily overcome that. And now, dear friend, continues he, refuſe me not; for as my firſt riſe was owing to your favor, ſo my downfal as abſolutely attends your refuſal.

DEAR Naſgig, ſays I, you know I love you, and could refuſe you nothing in my power; but for me to be mounted in the air, I know not how, over theſe rocks, and then drowned by a fall into the ſea, which is a neceſſary conſequence of ſuch a mad attempt; and all this in proſecution of a project founded upon an old wife's tale, is ſuch a chimera, as all men of ſenſe would laugh at; as if there was no way of deſtroying me, but with a guard of an hundred men, to ſouſe me into the wide ocean. A very pretty conqueror of rebels I ſhould prove truly, kicking for life, till the next wave ſent me to the bottom.

NASGIG looked then ſo grave, I almoſt thought I ſhould have heard no more of it; but after a ſhort pauſe, Peter, ſays he, I am ſorry you make ſo light of ſacred things; a thing foretold ſo long ago by a holy ragam, kept up by undoubted tradition ever ſince, in the manner I have told you, in part performed, and now waiting your concurrence for its accompliſhment; but if I cannot prevail with you, though I periſh at my return, I dread to think you may be forced without thanks to perform, what generouſly to undertake will be your greateſt glory.

PRAY, ſays I, Naſgig, for now I perceive you are in earneſt, what may this famous prediction be?

AH, Peter, ſays Naſgig, to what purpoſe ſhould I relate ſo ſacred a prediction to one, who, though the moſt concerned in it, makes ſuch a jeſt of it?

HIS mentioning me as concerned in it, raiſed my curioſity once more to deſire a relation of it. Why ſhould I relate it, ſays he, if you are reſolved not to

fulfil it? I told him, I had no reſolution againſt any thing that related to my own good, or that of my friends; but the greateſt queſtion with me, ſays I, is, whether I am at all concerned in it? O clearly, clearly, ſays he, there is no doubt of it, it muſt mean you or no body. I told him I muſt judge by the words of it, that I was the perſon intended by it; and till that was apparent to my reaſon, it would be difficult to procure my conſent to ſo perilous an undertaking. And, ſays he, will you upon hearing it judge impartially, and go with me if you can take the application to yourſelf? I cannot go quite ſo far as that, ſays I, but this I will promiſe you, I will judge impartially, and if I can ſo apply it to myſelf, that it muſt neceſſarily mean me and no other, and if you can convince me I may go ſafely, I will go.

NASCIG was ſo rejoiced at this, he was at a loſs how to expreſs himſelf. My dear Peter, ſays he, you have given me new life; our ſtate is free, our perſons free, we are free, we are free! and Peter, ſays he, now I have given vent to my joy, you ſhall hear the prediction.

YOU muſt know, this holy ragam lived four ages ago; and from certain dreams and revelations he had had, ſet himſelf to overturn our country-worſhip of the great image; and by his ſanctity of life and ſound reaſonings, he had almoſt effected, it under the aſſiſtance of Begſurbeck then our king, who had fully embraced his tenets; but the reſt of the ragams oppoſing him, and finding he could not advance his ſcheme, he withdrew from the ragams, to a cloſe retirement for ſeveral years; and juſt before his death, ſending for the king and all the ragams, he told them he ſhould certainly die that day; and that he could not die at peace

till he had informed them what had been revealed to him; desiring them to take notice of it, not as a conjecture of his own, but a certain verity, which should hereafter come to pass. Says he, 'You know you 'have rejected the alteration in your religion I pro- 'posed to you; and which Begsurbeck, here present, 'would have advanced; and now I must tell you, what 'you have brought upon yourselves. As for Begsur- 'beck, he shall reign the longest and most prosperously 'of all your former and future kings; but in twice his 'time outrun, the west shall be divided from the east, 'and bring sorrow, confusion, and slaughter, till the wa- 'ters of the earth shall produce a glumm, with hair 'round his head, swimming and flying without the 'gramdee; who with unknown fire and smoke, shall 'destroy the traitor of the west, settle the ancient 'limits of the monarchy, by common consent establish 'what I would have taught you, change the name of 'this country, introduce new laws and arts, add king- 'doms to this state, and force tributes from the bowels 'of the earth, of such things as this kingdom shall not 'know till then, and shall never afterwards want; and 'then shall return to the waters again. Take care, says 'he, you miss not the opportunity when it may be had, 'for once lost, it shall never, never more return; and 'then, wo, wo, wo, to my poor country.' The ragam having said this, expired.

THIS prediction made so great an impression on Begsurbeck, that he ordered singly all the ragams before him, and heard them repeat it; which having done, and made himself perfect in it, he ordered it to be pronounced twelve times in the year, on particular days, in the moucherat, that the people might learn it by heart; that they and their children being perfect in it,

might not fail of applying it, when the man from the waters ſhould appear with proper deſcription.

THUS Peter, ſays he, has this prediction been kept up in our memories as perfectly, as if it had but juſt been pronounced to us.

IT is very true, ſays I, here may have been a prediction, and it may have been, as you ſay handed down very exactly from Begſurbeck's days till now; but, how does that affect me? how am I concerned in it? Surely if any marks would have denoted me to be the man, ſome of the Colambs, who have ſo lately left me, and were ſo long with me, would have found them out in my perſon, or among the ſeveral actions of my life I recounted to them.

UPON the return of the Colambs from you, ſays Naſgig, they told his majeſty what they had heard and ſeen at Grandevolet; and the ſtory was conveyed through the whole realm; but every man has not the faculty of diſtinction: Now one of the ragams when he had heard of you, applying you to the prediction, and that to you, ſoon found our deliverer in you; and at a public moucherat, after firſt pronouncing the prediction, declared himſelf thereon to the following effect:

'MAY it pleaſe your majeſty, and you the honour-
'able Colambs, the reverend ragams, and people of
'this ſtate, ſays he; you all know that our famous king
'Begſurbeck, who reigned at the time of this predic-
'tion, did live ſixty years after it in the greateſt ſplen-
'dour, and died at the age of one hundred and twenty
'years, having reigned full ninety of them; and here-
'in you will all agree with me, that no king before, or

'since, has done the like. You all likewise know, that 'within two hundred years after Begsurbeck's death, 'that is, about twice his reign of ninety years outrun, 'the rebellion in the west began, which has been car- 'ried on ever since; and our strength diminishing, as 'theirs increases, we are now no fair match for them; 'but are fearful of being undone. So far you will agree 'matters have tallied with the prediction; and now, to 'look forward to the time to come, it becomes us to 'lay hold of the present opportunity for our relief; for 'that once slipped, will never return; and if I have 'any skill in interpretations, now is the time of our 'deliverance.

'OUR prediction foretells the past evils, their in- 'crease and continuance, till the waters of the earth 'shall produce a glumm: Here I must appeal to the 'honourable Colambs present, if the waters have not 'done so, in the person of glumm Peter of Grandevo- 'let; as they have received it from his own report.'

ALL the Colambs then rising, and making reverence to the king, declared it was most true.

'THE next part, says the ragam, is, he is to be 'hairy round his head; and how his person in this re- 'spect agrees with the prediction, I beg leave to be in- 'formed by the Colambs.'

THE Colambs then rising, declared, that having seen and conversed with him, they could not observe any hair on the fore-part of his head; but I answered, that when I left you, I well remembered your having short stubbs of hair upon your cheeks and chin; which I had no sooner mentioned, than your father arose and told

the assembly, that though he did not mind it whilst he was with you, yet he remembered that his daughter, a year before, had told him that you had hair on your face before, as long as that behind.

THIS again putting new life into the ragam, he proceeded. 'Then let this, says he, be put to the trial, 'by an embassy to glumm Peter; and if it answers, 'there will be no room to doubt the rest. Then, says 'the ragam, it is plain by the report of the Colambs, 'that glumm Peter has not the graundee.

'As to the next point, he is to swim and fly. Now I 'am informed he swims daily, in a thing he calls a 'boat.' To which the Colambs all agreed 'And now, 'says he, that he flies too, that must be fulfilled; for 'every word must have a meaning, and that indeed he 'must do, if ever he comes hither. I therefore advise, 'that a contrivance be some how found out, for con-'veying glumm Peter through the air to us; and then 'we shall answer that part of the prediction; and I 'think and do not doubt, but that may be done.

'Now, says he, let us see the benefit predicted to 'us, upon the arrival of glumm Peter. Our words 'are; who with unknown fire and smoke, shall destroy 'the traitor of the west. What can be plainer than this? 'For I again appeal to the Colambs, for his making 'unknown fire and smoke.

'THUS far, says the ragam, we have succeeded 'happily towards a discovery of the person; but it 'ends not here, with the death of the traitor; but such 'other benefits are to accrue, as are mentioned in the

'following part of the prediction; they are bleſſings yet 'to come; and who knows the end of them?

'I hope, ſays the ragam, I have given ſatisfaction 'in what I have ſaid, and ſhall now leave it to the 'care of thoſe, whoſe buſineſs it is to provide that none 'of thoſe woes pronounced againſt us may hap-'pen; by miſſing the time, which when gone, will 'never return.'

THE aſſembly were coming to a reſolution of ſending you a pompous embaſſy; but your father prevailed for ſending me only: For, ſays he, my ſon thinks better of him, than of the reſt of our whole race. So this important affair was committed to me, with orders to prepare a conveyance for you; which I cannot attempt to do, but ſhall refer myſelf to your more ſolid judgment in the contrivance of it.

I HAD ſat very attentive to Naſgig, and from what he had declared, could not ſay but there was a very great reſemblance between myſelf and the perſon predicted of; but then, ſays I, they are idolaters, providence would not interpoſe in this affair, when all the glory of its ſucceſs muſt redound to an idol. But, ſays I, has not the ſame thing often happened from oracular preſages, where the glory muſt redound to the falſe deity? But what if, as is predicted, their religion is to be changed to the old ragam's plan, and that will be to the abolition of idolatry? I know not what to ſay, but if I thought my going would gain a ſingle ſoul to the eternal truth, I ſhould not ſcruple to hazard my life in the attempt.

I THEN called in Youwarkee, and told her the whole affair of the prediction, which she had often heard, I found, and could have repeated. I told her, that the king and states had pitched on me, as the person intended by their prediction; and that Nasgig was sent to fetch me over; and indeed, says I, Youwee, if this be a true prediction, it seems very applicable to me as far as I can see. Yes truly, says she, so it does, now I consider it in the light you say the ragam puts it. Why, says I, prophecies and predictions are never delivered so plain as to mention names; but yet upon the solution, they become as intelligible as if they did; the circumstances tallying so exactly. But what would you have me do? Shall I, or shall I not go? Go! says she, how can you go? O, says I, never fear that. If this is from above, means will soon be found; providence never directs effects without means.

YOUWARKEE, whose head ran only on the dangers of the undertaking, had a violent conflict with herself; the love of me, of her children, and of her country, divided her so, she was not capable of advising. I pressed her opinion again, when she told me to follow the dictates of my own reason, and, but for the dread of losing you, and for my childrens sakes, says she, I should have no choice to make when my country is at stake; but you know best.

I TOLD Youwarkee, that I really found the prediction the plainer the more I thought of it; and that above all, the change of religion was the uppermost; For if I can reduce a state from the misery and bondage of idolatry, to a true sense of the Supreme Being, and seemingly by his own direction; shall I fear to risk my own life for it, or will he suffer me to perish,

till ſomewhat at leaſt is done towards it? and how do I know but the whole tendency of my life has been by impulſe hither for this very purpoſe? My dear Youwee, ſays I, fear nothing, I will go.

I CALLED Naſgig and told him my reſolution, and that he had nothing now to do but prepare a means of conveying me. He ſaid, he begged to refer that to me, for my own thoughts would ſuggeſt to me both the ſafeſt and eaſieſt means.

I WANTED to venture on the back of ſome ſtrong glumm, when Naſgig told me, no one could endure my weight ſo long a flight. But what charmed me moſt was, the lovely Youwarkee offered to carry me herſelf if ſhe could; and if I cannot hold out, ſays ſhe, my dear, we can but at laſt drop both together. I kiſſed the charming creature with tears in my eyes, but declined the experiment.

I TOLD Naſgig I wanted to divide my weight between two or four glumms, which I believed I could eaſily do; and aſked if each could hold out with a fourth part of my weight. He told me there was no doubt of that; but he was afraid I ſhould drop between their graundees, he imagining I intended to lie along on their backs, part of me on each of them, or ſhould bear ſo much on them as to prevent their flight. I told him, I did not purpoſe to diſpoſe of myſelf in the manner he preſumed; but if two or four could undoubtedly bear my weight ſo long a flight; I would order myſelf without any other inconvenience to my bearers than ther burden. He made light of my weight between four, as a trifle; and ſaid he would be one with all his heart. Nay, ſays I, if four cannot hold out, can eight?

He plainly told me, as he knew not what I meant he could say nothing to it; nor could imagine how I could divide so small a body as mine, into eight different weights; for it seemed impossible he said to him; but if I would shew him my method, he would then give me his opinion.

I THEN leaving him, took out my tools; I pitched upon a strong broad board my wife had sent me from the ship, about twelve feet long, and a foot and half broad: Upon the middle of which, I nailed down one of my chairs. Then I took one cord of about thirty-four feet long, making hand-loops at each end, and nailed it down in the middle to the under side of my board, as near as I could to the fore end of it; and I took another cord of the same length and make, and this I nailed within three feet of the further end of my board. I then took a cord of about twenty feet long, and nailed about three feet behind the foremost, and a fourth of the same length, at the further end of my board; by which means, the first and third ropes being the longest, and at such a distance from the short ropes, the glumms who held them, would fly so much higher and forwarder than the short rope ones, that they and their ropes would be quite out of the others way; which would not have happened if either the ropes had been all of one length, or nearer to, or farther from one another: And then considering that if I should receive a sudden jerk or twitch, I might possibly be shook off my chair, I took a smaller rope to tie myself with fast to the chair; and then I was sure if I fell into the sea, I should at least have the board and chair with me, which might possibly buoy me up, till the glumms could descend to my assistance.

HAVING carried the machine down to the level with the help of two of Naſgig's men, he being out on a walk, and having never ſeen it; I ordered one of the men to ſit upon the chair, and eight more to hold by the loops, and riſe with him; but as I found it difficult at their firſt riſing, not being able to mount all equally to carry the board up even, and the back part riſing firſt, the front pitched againſt the ground and threw the fellow out of the chair. I therefore bade them ſtop, and ordered eight others to me; ſaid I, hold each of you one of theſe ropes as high as you can over your heads; then, ſays I, to the eight bearers mount on your grandees, and come round behind him in the chair gently, two and two, and take each of you a loop, and hover with it till you are all ready, and then riſe together; keeping your eyes on the board that it riſes neither higher of one ſide than the other; and ſee you all feel your weight alike, then fly croſs the lake and back again. They did ſo, and with as much eaſe they told me, as if they had nothing in their hands; and the man rode with ſo much ſtate and compoſure, he ſaid, that I longed to try it myſelf: So ſhifting places with the glumm, I mounted the chair, and tying myſelf round, I aſked if any one knew which way Naſgig walked. One of them pointing to where he ſaw him juſt before in the wood; I ordered them to take me up as before, and go that way.

UPON coming to the place where I expected Naſgig was, I hallowed and called him, who knowing my voice, ran to the ſkirt of the wood; and ſeeing me mounted in my flying chair, I jokingly told him I was going, if he had any commands; but he mounting immediately came up to me, and viewing me round, and ſeeing the pleaſure the men ſeemed to carry me with;

ſays he, are you all ſure you can carry him ſafe to Battingdrigg? They all replied, yes, with eaſe. This then, ſays he, is your doom; if you perform it not, every one ſhall be ſlit; but if you carry the Deliverer ſafe, you are ſilgays every man of you, he verily thinking I was then going off; but I undeceived him, by ordering them to turn about, and ſet me down where I was taken up.

NASGIG alighting, and viewing my contrivance; This, Peter, ſays he, is but a very plain thing. It is ſo, ſays I, but it is as far as my ingenuity could reach. Ah Peter, ſays he, ſay not ſo, for if the greateſt difficulties, as I and all my nation thought it would be to convey you to them, are ſo plain and eaſy to you, what muſt leſſer things be? No, Peter, I did not call it plain, becauſe it might be eaſily done when it was ſeen; but in reſpect to the head that formed it; for the neareſt way to attain one's end is always the beſt, and attended for the moſt part with feweſt inconveniences; and I verily think, Peter, though we believe the riſe or fall of our ſtate wholly depends on you, you muſt have ſtayed at Grandevolet, but for your own ingenuity. Well, and when ſhall we ſet out, ſays he? I told him it would take up ſome time to ſettle the affairs of my family, and to conſider what I had beſt take with me; and required at leaſt three days, being as little as I could have, I told him for that purpoſe.

NASGIG, who, as he was an honeſt man, and for making the beſt for his patrons, was ſorry it was ſo long, though he imagining at the ſame time it was ſhort enough for one who was to go on ſuch an enterprize, was glad it was no longer; and immediately diſpatched a trumpet expreſs with notice, that on the fourth day he ſhould beat the height of Battingdrigg; and that

having myſelf formed a machine for that purpoſe, I would accompany him.

I BEGAN next to conſider what part I had to act at Doorpt Swangeanti, for I neither could nor would call it by any other name, when I came thither; and what it was they expected from me. I am, ſays I, to kill a traitor; good, that may be, but then I muſt take a gun and ammunition; and why not ſome piſtols and cutlaſſes? If I cannot uſe them all, I can teach others who may. I will take ſeveral of them, and all my guns except two, and I will leave a pair of piſtols; I may return and want them. I will take my two beſt ſuits of cloaths and other things ſuitable; for if I am to perform things according to this prediction, it may be a long time before I get back again. Thinks I, Youwarkee ſhall ſtay here with the children; and if I like my ſettlement, I can ſend for her at any time. I then began to ſee the neceſſity of making at leaſt one more machine to carry my goods on; and ſays I, as they will be very weighty, I muſt have more laſks to ſhift in carrying them; for I will retain ſixteen for my own body machine, in order to relieve each other; and as the diſtance is ſo great I will not be ſtinted for want of freſh hands.

BEING come to this reſolution I called Naſgig, and ordered eight freſh laſks to attend my baggage: Theſe, he ſoon ſingled out; ſo having ſettled all matters with my wife, and taken leave of her and the children, I charged them not to ſtir out of the grotto till I was gone; and leaving them all in tears, I ſet out with a heavy heart for the level; where the whole convoy and my two machines waited for me.

CHAP. IX.

Peter's ſpeech to the ſoldiery; offers them freedom; his journey; is met by the king; the king ſent back, and why; Peter alights in the king's garden; his audience; deſcription of his ſupper and bed.

WHEN we came to the level, I deſired Naſgig to draw all his men into a circle as near as they could ſtand; I then aſked them who would undertake to carry me? When not a man but proffered his ſervice, and deſired to have the poſt of honour as they called it. I told them my queſtion was only in caſe of neceſſity, to know whom I might depend upon; for my bearers were already provided, ſaving accidents. But, my friends, ſays I, as you are equally deſerving for the offered ſervice, as if you were accepted, are any of you deſirous of becoming filgays? They all anſwering together, I, I, I. Naſgig, ſays I, you and I muſt come to a capitulation before I go, and your honour muſt be pledged for performance of articles.

I BEGAN with telling them what an enemy I was to ſlavery; and, ſays I, to Naſgig, as I am about to undertake what no man upon earth ever did before; to quit my country, my family, my every other conveniency of life, for I know not what, I know not where; and from whence I ſhall never return: I muſt be indulged, if I am ever ſo fortunate as to arrive in your country, in the ſatisfaction of ſeeing all theſe my fellow travellers as happy as myſelf; for which reaſon I muſt inſiſt upon every man preſent alighting with me in ſafety, being made free the moment we touch the ground: And un-

leſs you will engage your honour for this, I will not ſtir a ſtep further.

NASGIG pauſed for an anſwer; for though my bearers were his own laſks, and he could diſpoſe of them at pleaſure, yet as the reſt were the king's, he knew not how far he might venture to promiſe for them; but being deſirous of getting me over the rock, fearing I might ſtill retract my purpoſe, he engaged to procure their freedom of the king: And this, I thought, would make the men more zealous in my ſervice.

I THEN permitting them to take me up, we were over the rock as quick as thought, and when I had a little experienced the flight, I perceived I had nothing to fear; for they were ſo dexterous on the graundee, that I received not the leaſt ſhock all the way, or ſcarce a wry poſition, though every quarter of an inch at hand made a conſiderable deflection from the perpendicular. We ſhifted but twice till we came to Battingdrigg; the manner of which I directed as I ſat in my chair: For I ordered the new man to hover over him he was to relieve, and reaching down his hand to meet the others which was held up with the rope, the old bearer ſunk beneath the chair, and the reliever took his courſe. This we did one by one, till all were changed; but there was one, a ſtout young fellow, at the firſt ſhort rope, on my right hand, who obſerving me eye him more than the reſt, in a bravadoe would not be relieved before we arrived at Battingdrigg arkoe; and I afterwards took him into my family.

As it was now ſomewhat advanced into the light ſeaſon, I had hopes of a tolerable good proſpect; but had it been quite light, I ſhould have been never the

better for it. I had been upon very high mountains in the inland parts of Africa; but was never too high to see what was below me before, though very much contracted; but here in the highest of our flight, you could not distinguish the globe of the earth but by a sort of mist, for every way looked alike to me; then sometimes on a cue given, from an inexpressible height my bearers would dart as it were sloping like a shooting star, for an incredible distance almost to the very surface of the sea, still keeping me as upright as a Spaniard on my seat. I asked them the reason of their so vast descent, when I perceived the labour they had afterwards to attain the same height again. They told me, they not only eased their graundees by that descend, but could fly half as far again in a day, as by direct, they meant horizontal flight; for though it seemed laborious to mount so excessive high, yet they went on at the same time at a great rate; but when they came to descend again, there was no comparition in their speed. And on my conscience I believe they spoke true, for in their descents, I think no arrow could have reached us.

In about sixteen hours, for I took my watch with me, we alighted on the height of Battingdrigg; when I thought I had returned to my own arkoe it was so like it, but much larger. Here we rested four hours; I opened my chest and gave each of my bearers a drop of brandy, Nasgig and I also just wetted our mouths, and eat a piece of preserve to moisten us; the rest of the lasks sitting down, and feeding upon what they had brought with them in their colapets; for their method is, when they take long flights, to carry a number of hard round fruits, flat like my cream-cheeses, but much less, which containing a sort of flower they eat dry;

then drinking, that ſwells and fills them as much as a good meal of any thing elſe would. Here we met with abundance of delightful pools of water on the vaſt flat of the rocks. They told me, in that arkoe the young glumms and gawreys came in vaſt flights, ſeparately, to divert themſelves on the fine lake of waters, and from thence, went ſometimes as far as my arkoe for that purpoſe; but that was but ſeldom.

When we had ſufficiently reſted, they ſhut their colapets, which ſometimes hung down from their necks and were ſometimes ſwung round to their backs, and croſſing the arkoe and another large ſea, but nothing comparable to the firſt, we arrived in about ſix hours more, to the height of the white mountains, which Nafgig told me was the confines of Georigetti's territories; but, thinks I, it may belong to who it will for the value of it; for nothing could be more barren than all the top of it was; but the inſide of it made amends for that, by the prodigious tall and large trees it abounded with, full of the ſtrangeſt kinds of fruits I had even ſeen. And theſe trees, moſt of them ſeemed to grow out of the very ſtone itſelf, not a peck of dirt being to be collected near them. Without ſide of theſe mountains it was ſcarce darker than at my arkoe; for I made all the obſervation my time would allow me; when ſpying at a vaſt diſtance ſeveral lights, which were unuſual things to me in that country; they told me the largeſt was the burning mountain Alkoe, this I remembered to have heard the name of upon ſome former occaſion, though I could not recollect what; and that the reſt were of the ſame ſort, but ſmaller. I aſked if they were in Georigetti's territories? They ſaid no, they belonged to another king formerly, whoſe ſubjects were as fond of fire, as Georigetti's were of avoiding it; and

that many of them worked with it always before them, and made an inſufferable noiſe by it.

AT hearing the above relation, an impreſſion ſtruck my fancy that they might be a ſort of ſmiths or workers in iron, or other metals; and I wiſhed myſelf with them, for I had a mighty notion of that work, having been frequently at a neighbouring forge when a boy, and knew all their tools, and reſolved to get all the information I could of that country ſome other time; for our company drawing to their poſts, and preparing to ſet forward again I could have no more talk now; and you muſt know, I had obſerved ſo many idle raſcals before I left England, who could neither ſtrike a ſtroke or ſtir a foot, whilſt you talked with them; that I feared if I aſked any queſtions by the way, they ſhould in anſwering me neglect their duty, and let me drop.

WHEN we came near our journey's end, Naſgig aſked me where I would pleaſe to alight. I told him, I thought at my father's; for though I came on a viſit to the king, it would not ſhew reſpect to go before him juſt off a journey. But I might have ſpared me the trouble of ſettling that point; for we were not gone far from the black mountain, it going by that name within ſide, though it is called the white without, before we heard the gripſacks, and a ſort of ſqueaking or ſcreaming muſic very loud. Naſgig told me the king was in flight. I aſked him how he knew that, for I could ſee no body. He knew it, he ſaid, by the gripſack and the other muſic, which never played but on that occaſion; and preſently after I thought the whole kingdom were on the graundee, and was going to order my bearers back to the mountain, for fear of the concourſe. Thinks I, they will joſtle me down out of

civility, and I ſhall break my neck to gratify their curioſity. So I told Naſgig, if he did not ſome how ſtop the multitude, I would turn back for the mountain, for I would never venture into that croud of people.

NASGIG ſprung away to the king, and informed him; but the king fearing the people ſhould be diſguſted at his ſending them back, gave orders for the whole body to file off to the right and left, and taking a vaſt ſweep each way, to fall in behind me; but upon no account to come near me, for fear of miſchief. This was no ſooner ſaid than done, and all ſpreading into two vaſt ſemicircles, met in a train juſt behind my chair.

NASGIG had alſo perſwaded the king to retreat back to the palace, telling him it was not with me as it was with them, who could help themſelves in caſe of accident; but as I was under the guidance of others, and on a foundation he ſhould ſcarce, in my condition, have ventured upon; he was ſure, I ſhould be better ſatisfied with his intended reſpect only, than to receive it there: But, ſays he, that your majeſty may ſee his contrivance, I will cauſe him to alight in the palace garden, where you may have the pleaſure of viewing him in his machine.

THE king returning, ordered all the Colambs, who waited for my arrival, to aſſemble in council again; and as I went over the city, I was much ſurprized to ſee all the rock of which it conſiſted, quite covered with people, beſides prodigious numbers in the air, all ſhouting out peals of welcome to me; and as we were then but little above their heads, every one had ſomething to ſay of me; one wondering what I had got on, another ſwearing he ſaw hair on my face

as long as his arm; and in general, every one calling upon the image for my ſafety.

THE king was preſent when I alighted, in the garden; and himſelf taking me from my chair, I bent on one knee to kiſs his hand, but he took me in his arms, and called me his father, and told me, he hoped I would make his days equal in glory to his great anceſter Begſurbeck. We complimented ſometime, before he took me into a ſmall refectory in the garden, and gave me ſome of his ſort of wine; which I found was loaded with ramſhorn, and ſome dried and moiſt ſweetmeats. He told me, I had a piece of ceremony to go through, after which, he hoped to have me all to himſelf. I told him, whatever forms of ſtate were cuſtomary, they become neceſſary, and I ſhould obey him.

HIS majeſty then called one of the perſons in waiting, and telling him he was going to the room of audience, ordered him to conduct me thither forthwith.

FOLLOWING my guide, after a long walk through a ſort of piazza, we entered under a ſtately arch curiouſly carved, into a very ſpacious room, lighted with infinite numbers of globe-lamps; where he deſired me to ſit down on a round ſtone pedeſtal covered with leaves, and all round the ſides of it, were running foliages exquiſitely wrought; on the walls were carved figures of glumms in ſeveral actions, but chiefly in battle, or other warlike exerciſes, in *alto relievo*, very bold; with other devices interſperſed. I ſat down, having firſt paid my ſubmiſſion to the throne, and to the ſeveral Colambs who ſat on the king's right and left, down the ſides of the room.

THE perſon then who introduced me, going into the middle of the room, ſpoke to this effect: 'Mighty king, 'and you honourable lords his Colambs, here is preſent 'the glumm Peter of Grandevolet; I wait your com-'mands, where to diſpoſe him.'

THEN the king, and all the Colambs ariſing, another perſon ſtepped forth, and looking at me, for I was ſtanding; glumm Peter of Grandevolet, ſays he, I am to ſignify to you, that the mighty king Georigetti, and all his honourable Colambs, congratulate your arrival in Norrunbdſgrſutt, and have commanded me to give you rank according to your merit. Then the king and Colambs ſat down, and I was led to the king's right hand, and placed on the ſame ſtone with, but at ſome ſmall diſtance from, his majeſty.

THE king then told me the great pleaſure I had done him and the Colambs, in my ſo ſpeedy arrival upon their meſſage; but ſaid, he would give me no further trouble now, than to know how I choſe to be ſerved; and deſired me to give orders to a baſh, he would ſend to me, for whatever I wanted; and then giving orders to a baſh to ſhew me my lodgings, I was permitted to retire to refreſh myſelf.

I WAS then conducted to my apartment, up a ſloping flight of ſtone, very long, with a vaſt arch over my head; I believe it might be fifty paces long at leaſt, but being a very broad eaſy aſſent, and ſmooth, it was not in the leaſt fatiguing. All the way I went were the ſame ſort of globe lights as in the audience room. The ſtair-caſe, if I may call it ſo, it anſwering the ſame purpoſe, was moſt beautifully carved, both ſides and top; at length I came into a very large gallery, at

leaſt fourſcore paces long, and about twenty broad; on each ſide of which hung the ſame globes. At the further end of this gallery I entered by an arch, very narrow, but moſt neatly wrought into an oval room; in the middle of this room, on the right hand, was another ſmall neat arch-way; entering through which about ten paces, there was two ſmaller arches to the right and left, and within them, with an eaſy aſcent of about three paces, you came to a flat trough of ſtone, ſix or ſeven feet long, and about the ſame width; theſe I underſtood by my baſh, were the beds to lie on. I aſked him, if they were uſed to lie on the bare ſtone. He told me ſome did but he had orders to lye me on doſſe [ſofts]; and preſently up came four fellows with great mats, as I took them for by my globe-light, full of ſomething, which by their ſo eaſily carrying ſo great a bulk, I perceived was very light. They pitched it down upon my ſtone bed-ſtead, and firſt with great ſticks, and then with ſmall ſwitches having beat it ſoundly, retired.

WHILST I looked about at the oddity of the place, I found my baſh was gone too. So, ſays I, all gone? I ſuppoſe they intend I ſhall now go to bed. I then went into my bed-chamber, for there were globe lights there too, and obſerving my bed lay full four feet above the ſtone, and ſloping higher to the ſides and head, I went to feel what it was, but laying my hand upon it, it was ſo ſoft, I could feel no reſiſtance till I had preſſed it ſome way; and it lay ſo light, that a fly muſt have ſunk upon it. Well, thinks I, what if I never lay thus before, I believe I have laid as bad.

I THEN took a turn into my oval room again, and obſerved the floor, ſides, and all was ſtone, as ſmooth

as poſſible, but not poliſhed; and the walls and ceiling and in ſhort every place, where they could be ornamental were well adorned with carvings, as can be conceived.

THOUGH no body came near me, yet I did not care to be too inquiſitive all at once, but I longed to know what they burnt in the globes, which gave ſo ſteady a light, and yet ſeemed to be encloſed quite round, top and ſides, without any vent hole for the ſmoke to evaporate. Surely thinks I, they are a dulliſh glaſs, for they hung almoſt above my touch, and muſt be exceeding hot with the fire ſo encloſed, and have ſome ſmall vent hole, though I cannot ſee it. Then ſtanding on a tip-toe to feel, it ſtruck quite cold to my finger; but I could only reach to touch that, or any of the reſt, being all of one height.

WHILST I was muſing thus, I heard the ſound of voices coming along the gallery; and preſently came a train of ſervants, with as much victuals as an hundred men could eat, and wines proportionable; they ſet it down at the upper end of the oval room, on a flat of ſtone, which on making the room had been left in the upper bend of the oval, quite croſs it, about table high, for that purpoſe. Theſe eatables, ſuch as were liquid, or had ſauces to them, were ſerved up in a ſort of grey ſtone bowls; but the dry where brought in neat wooden baſkets of twig-work.

THE ſervants all retiring into the gallery, except my baſh, I aſked him if any body was to eat with me; he told me no. I wonder, ſays I, they ſhould ſend me ſo much then. He replied it was the allowance of my

appartment, by his majeſty's orders; which ſilenced me.

I BELIEVE there were twenty different things on the table, inſomuch, that I did not know where to begin, and heartily wiſhed for an excuſe to get rid of my baſh, who ſtood cloſe at my elbow, that I might have ſmelt, and taſted, before I helped myſelf to any thing; for I knew not what any one thing was.

IN this perplexity, I aſked my baſh what poſt he was in under his majeſty? He ſaid one of the fifty baſhes, appointed to be near the king's favourites when at court. And pray, ſaid I, are you the perſon to attend me? He was, he ſaid, the principal to wait on my perſon; but there were at leaſt ſixty others, who had different offices in this appartment. I would be glad, ſaid I, to know your name, that I may the more readily ſpeak to you. He told me his name was Quilly. Then pray Quilly, ſays I, do you know what is become of my baggage and my chair? I found, though he gueſſed at my baggage, he was puzzled at the name of chair; my ſeat? ſays I, O, I underſtand you, ſays he. Then pray, will you go bring me word of them, and ſee them brought ſafe up into the gallery. He tripped away on my errand. So, thinks I, now I am fairly rid of you; but I had ſcarce turned any of my viands over, before I found he had but ſtepped into the gallery, to ſend ſome of the idle fellows, in waiting there; and this puting me to a nonplus, Quilly, ſays I, you know I am a ſtranger here, and as different countries have different ways and cuſtoms; as well of dreſſing their eatables as other things, and theſe diſhes being dreſſed contrary to my cuſtom, I ſhall be glad if you will name ſome of

them to me, that I may know them when I ſee them again.

QUILLY began with this, and run on to that, which was a fine diſh; and the other, few but the king have at their tables; and here, ſays he, is a diſh of padſi; and there——Hold, hold, ſays I, Quilly, let us try theſe firſt, before you proceed; for I remembered at my grotto they all eat my fiſh for patſi, and I cut a ſlice of it, for I always carried my claſp-knife in my pocket, and they had no ſuch thing there, and laying it on a round cake I took for my trencher, I taſted it, and found it ſo, to my apprehenſion, in the palate; but it did not look or flake like fiſh, as I obſerved by the ſlices they had cut it into, for all the victuals was in long ſlices ready to bite at. I aſked him if theſe things were not all cut, and with what? for I underſtood they had no knives, ſhewing him mine. He ſaid, the cook cut it with a ſharp ſtone. I then aſked him the names of ſeveral other things, and at laſt he came to crullmott; which having heard of before, I now taſted, and could have ſworn it had been a haſhed fowl. I aſked him, if crullmotts were very common? He told me, yes, towards the bottoms of the mountains there were abundance of crullmott-trees. No, no, ſays I, not trees; I mean fowls, birds. I do not know what they are, ſaid he, but theſe crullmotts grow on very large trees. Indeed, I did not know yet what I was at; but, ſays I, if your fowls do, ſure your fiſh do not grow on trees too. We have none of them, ſays he, in this country. Why, ſays I, it is but this moment I taſted one. I do not know then, ſays he, where the cook got it. Why here, ſays I, what you call patſi, I call fiſh. Ay, patſi, ſays he, grows upon a buſh in the ſame woods. Well done ſays I, this is the firſt country I was ever in, where the

fiſh and fowl grew on trees; it is ten to one but I meet with an ox growing on ſome tree by the tail, before I leave you.

I HAD by this time, out of theſe two, and ſome other pickings, made up a very good meal; and putting my knife into my pocket, deſired ſomething to drink. My baſh aſked me what I pleaſed to have. I told him, any thing to take a good draught of. Then he filled me a bot [ſhell] of wine, very well taſted, thongh too ſweet for meals; but putting ſome water to it, it did very well.

MY meſſengers being returned, and having ſet all my things in the gallery; I deſired Quilly to let the victuals be taken away. Upon which there came more ſervants than diſhes, who took all at once; but ſome wine and water I deſired might remain.

I TOLD Quilly, I ſaw there were two beds, who are they for? ſays I. One for you, and one for me, ſays he, for we baſhes never leave the king's favourites. Pray Quilly, ſays I, what is the meaning that to the ſeveral rooms I have been in there is never a door? Door! ſays he, I do not know that. What, ſays I, do not you ſhut you rooms at night? No, no; ſhut at night! I never heard of that. I believe, ſays I, Quilly, it is almoſt bed-time, is it not? No, no, ſays Quilly, the gripſack has not ſounded. How do you know, ſays I, in this country, when you ſhould lie down, and when riſe? for my wife has told me you have no clocks. No, no clocks, ſays he. Then, ſays I, does every one riſe and lie down when they pleaſe? or do you all lie down, and all riſe together about the ſame time? O, ſays Quilly, you will hear the gripſack preſently; there are

ſeveral gluimms, who take it by turns to ſound it for reſt; and then we know it is time to lie down; and when they ſound it again, we know it is time to riſe. And afterwards I found theſe people gueſſed the time, being twelve hours between ſound and ſound, ſo well, that there was but few minutes variation at any time, between them and my watch; and I ſet my watch to go from their ſoundings at ſix o'clock.

I FOUND myſelf pretty much fatigued after my journey; for though I had only to ſit ſtill, yet the exceſſive velocity of ſuch an unuſual motion ſtrained every muſcle as much as the hardeſt labour: For you may imagine, I could not at firſt be without my fears upon ever ſo ſmall a variation of my chair; which though I could not poſſibly by my own inclination one way or other rectify; yet a natural propenſity to a perpendicular ſtation, involuntarily byaſſes one to incline this or that way in order to preſerve it: And then, at firſt, my breath being ready to fail me in proportion to the celerity of the flight, and to my own apprehenſions; and being upon that exerciſe near thirty hours, and without ſleep for almoſt forty, you may judge I wanted reſt; ſo I told Quilly I would lie down, and ordered him not to diſturb me till I waked of myſelf.

I COULD not prevent the officiouſneſs of my valet, to put me to bed, and cover me with the down, or whatever it was; for having no ſheets, I pulled off nothing but my coat, wig, and ſhoes, and putting on my flannel night-cap, I laid me down.

CHAP. X.

The king's apartments deſcribed; is introduced to the king; a moucheratt called; his diſcourſe with the king about religion.

I HAVE known ſome travellers ſo peculiar in their taſte, as not to be able to ſleep in a ſtrange lodging; but thanks to my kind ſtars, that did not prove my caſe; for having looked on my watch when I went to bed, as I call it, and finding it was down, I wound it up, and obſerved it began to go at about three o'clock, whether day or night it matters not; and when I waked it was paſt nine, ſo that I know I had ſlept eighteen hours; and finding that a very reaſonable refreſhment, and myſelf very hungry, I told Quilly to get me my breakfaſt.

QUILLY told me his majeſty had been to viſit me, but would not have me diſturbed. I begged him to diſpatch my breakfaſt as ſoon as poſſible, and let me have ſome water for my hands, he ordered the gallery-waiters, and every thing came immediately.

My breakfaſt was a brown liquid, with a ſort of ſeeds or grain in it, very ſweet and good; but the fear of the king's return, before I was ready for him, prevented my inquiring into what it was: So having finiſhed it, and waſhed my hands, Quilly preſented me a towel, which looked like an unbleached coarſe linen, but was very ſoft and ſpungy; and I found afterwards was made of threads of bark, ſtripped from ſome tree. I

put on my brown ſuit, ſword and long wig, and ſent Quilly to know when it was his majeſty's pleaſure I ſhould wait upon him.

I HAD been ſo much uſed to lamp light in my grotto, that the lights of this gloomy manſion did not ſeem ſo unuſual a thing to me, as they would have done to a ſtranger. The king ſent me word he would admit me immediately, and Quilly was my conductor to his majeſty's apartment.

WE paſſed through the gallery, at the further end of which was a very beautiful arch, even with the ſtair-caſe, through which Quilly led me into a large guard-room, wherein were above one hundred glumms poſted in ranks, with their pikes in hand, ſome headed with ſharp-pointed ſtone, and others with ſtone globes; paſſing through theſe, we entered another gallery as long as that to my appartment; then under another arch we came into a ſmall ſquare room, carved exceeding fine; on the right and left of which were two other arch-ways, leading into moſt noble rooms, but we only ſaw them, paſſing quite croſs the little room through an arch that fronted us, into a ſmall gallery of prodigious height; at the further end of which Quilly turning aſide a mat, introduced and left me in one of the moſt beautiful places in the univerſe, where neither ſeeing nor hearing any body ſtir, I employed myſelf in viewing the magnificence of the place, and could, as I then thought, have feaſted my eye with variety for a twelve-month. I paced it over one hundred and thirty of my paces long, and ninety-ſix broad; there were arches in the middle of each ſide, and in the middle of each end: The arch-ceiling could not be leſs than the breadth of the room, and covered with the moſt de-

lightful carvings, from whence hung globe lights innumerable, but ſeemingly without order, which I thought appeared the more beautiful on that account. In the center of the room hung a prodigious cluſter of the ſame lights, ſo diſpoſed as to repreſent one great light; and there where ſeveral rows of the ſame lights hung round the room, one row above another at proper diſtances; theſe lights repreſented to me the ſtars, with the moon in the middle of them; and after I came to be better acquainted with the country, I perceived the lights were to repreſent the ſouthern conſtellations. The arch-ways were carved with the fineſt devices imaginable, gigantic glumms ſupporting on each ſide the pediments. At every ten paces, all along the ſides and ends, aroſe columns, each upon a broad ſquare baſe admirably carved; theſe reached to the cornice, or baſe of the arched ceiling, quite round the room. On the pannels between each column were carved the different battles, and moſt remarkable atchievements of Begſirbeck himſelf. Over the arch I entered at, was the ſtatue of Begſirbeck, and over the oppoſite arch the old prophetic ragam. In the middle of the room ſtood a long ſtone table, length ways, moſt exquiſitely carved, almoſt the length of the room, except where it was divided in the middle, about the breadth of the arch-ways, in order for a paſſage from one arch to the other. In ſhort, to deſcribe this one room particularly, would make a volume of itſelf.

I STAID here a full hour and half, wondering why no body came to me; at length turning about, I ſaw two glumms coming towards me, and having received their compliments, they deſired me to walk in to the king. We paſſed through another middling room, and taking up a mat at the further ſide of it, I was conduct-

ed in where his majeſty was ſitting with another glumm. They both aroſe at my entrance, and calling me their father, and leading me, one by each hand, obliged me to ſit down between them.

AFTER ſome compliments about my journey, and accommodation ſince, the king told me I had not waited ſo long without, but he had ſome urgent diſpatches to make, and as he choſe to have me in private with him, he imagined, he ſaid, I would be able to divert myſelf in the boſke [great hall, or ſaloon]. I declared I had never ſeen any thing like it for grandeur and magnificence before; but the beauty of the ſculpture, and diſpoſition of the lights, were moſt exquiſite.

ALL this while I felt the other glumm handling my long wig, and feeling whether it grew to my head, or what it was; for he had by this time got his finger under the caul, and was pulling my hair down: When I turning about my head, glumm Peter, ſays the king, do not be uneaſy, the ragam will do you no hurt, it is only to ſatisfy his curioſity; and I choſe to have the ragam here, that we may more leiſurely adviſe with you what courſe to take in the preſent exigencies of my ſtate. I have fully heard the ſtory of your travels from my Colambs, and we have returned thanks to the great image for bringing you, after ſo many hazards and deliverances, ſafe to my dominions for our defence.

THE ragam deſired to know whether all that hair, meaning my wig, grew upon my head, or not. I told him no, it was a covering only, to put on occaſionally; but that hair did grow upon my head, and pulling off my wig, I ſhewed them. The ragam then aſked me if

I had hair of my own growing under that to, meaning my beard, which he then had in his hand, for their glumms have no beards; but I told him that grew there of itſelf. O parly puly! [ſweet image] ſays the ragam, riſing up and ſmiting his hands together, it is he, it is he!

PRAY, ſays I, ragam, who is this puly you ſpeak of? It is the image, ſays he, of the great Collwarr. Who is that? ſays I, Why, he that made the world, ſays he. And pray, ſays I, what did this image make? O, ſays he, we made the image. And pray, ſays I, cannot you break it again? Yes, ſays he if we had a mind to be ſtruck dead we might; for that would be the immediate conſequence of ſuch an attempt, nay of but holding up a finger againſt it in contempt. Pray, ſays I, did ever any perſon die that way? No, ſays he, no one ever durſt preſume to do it. Then perhaps, ſaid I, upon trial, the puniſhment you ſpeak of might not be the conſequence of ſuch an attempt. Pray, ſays I, what makes Collwarr have ſo great a kindneſs for that image? Becauſe, ſays he, it is his very likeneſs, and he gives him all he aſks for us; for we only aſk him. Why, ſays he, it is the image that has brought you amongſt us.

I DID not then think it a proper time to advance the contrary to the perſon I then had to do with, as I was ſure it would have done no good; for a prieſt is only to be convinced by the ſtrongeſt party; ſo I deferred my argument on that head to a fitter opportunity.

MOST admirable Peter, ſays the king, you, you are the glumm we depend upon to fulfil an ancient prediction delivered by a venerable ragam. If you will, Ragam I. O. ſhall repeat it to you, and therein you will be

able to discern yourself plainly described, in not only similar, but the express words I myself, from your story should describe you in.

In good earnest, I had from divers circumstances concluded, that I might be the person; and resolved, as I thought I had the best handle in the world for it from the prediction, to do what I could in the affair of religion, by fair means or stratagem, for I was sensible my own single force would not do it, before I began to shew myself in their cause, or else to desert them; and having had a small hint from Nasgig of what the old ragam's design was in part, and which I approved of, I proposed to add what else was necessary, as part of his design, if his proposals had been approved of.

I told the king I would excuse the ragam the repetition of the prediction, as I had partly been informed of it by Nasgig; and that conceiving myself, as he did, to be the person predicted of by the ragam, I had the more readily set out on this expedition, which nothing but the hopes of performing so great a good could have prevailed with me to undertake; and I did not doubt, with God's blessing, to accomplish it.

The king grew exceeding joyous at what I said, and told me he would call a moucheratt, at which all his Colambs should attend to have their advice, and then we would proceed to action; and ordered the ragam to let it be for the sixth day, and in the mean time that he and his brethren should, day and night, implore the image to guide their deliberations.

The ragam being gone, I told the king I had something to impart to him, in which it was my duty to ob-

tain his majesty's sentiments before I appeared publicly at the moucheratt. He desiring me to proceed; I told him I had been sometime considering the old ragam's prediction, with the occasion of it; and, says I, it is plain to me, that all these mischiefs have befallen you for neglect of the ragam's proposal concerning religion; as I understand your great ancestor would have come into it, and would have had his people done so too, but for the ragams, who hindered it.

You find, says I, by your traditional history, that Begsurbeck lived long, and reigned gloriously; and I would aim at making you as prosperous as he was, and infinitely more happy, not only in outward splendour here, but in great glory hereafter.

PERCEIVING that my discourse had quickened the king's attention; says I, I must let your majesty know it is the old ragam's plan I must proceed upon in every branch of it. Why, says the king, he would have abolished our worship of the image. And so would I, says I; nay, not only would, but must and will, before I engage myself in your deliverance; and then with the only assistance of the great Collwarr, whom I adore, and whom you must too, if you expect any service from me; I do not doubt to prevail.

YOUR majesty sees, says I, in few words, I have been very plain with you, and I desire you in as concise and plain a manner to answer me, what are your thoughts on this head; for I can say no more till I hear them.

THE king seeing me so peremptory; glumm Peter, says he, looking about to see no one was near, I have

too much ſenſe to imagine our image can do either good or hurt; for if it could have done us good, why would it not in our greateſt diſtreſs, now near two hundred years paſt? For my own part I put no truſt in it, nor did my famous anceſtor the great Begſurbeck; but here is my difficulty, where to chooſe another object of worſhip; for I perceive by myſelf, mankind muſt, through natural impulſe, look to ſomewhat ſtill above them, as a child does to his father, from whom he hopes for, and expects ſuccour in his difficulties; and though the father be not able to aſſiſt him, ſtill he looks to him: And therefore, I ſay, we muſt have another before we can part with this, or the people, inſtead of the part who have been in the defection, will all deſert me; for they are eaſy now in hopes of help from the image, and every little gleam of ſucceſs is attributed to it: But for the diſadvantages we receive, the ragams charge them on the peoples not praying, and paying ſufficiently; which they, poor ſouls! knowing in their conſciences to be true enough, are willing rather, as they are bid, to take the blame upon themſelves, than to ſuffer the leaſt to fall on the image.

All this, ſays the king, I am ſenſible of; but ſhould I tell them ſo, my life muſt pay for it; for the ragams would bring ſome meſſage from the image againſt me, to deſert or murder me; and then happy would be the firſt man who could begin the miſchief, which the reſt would ſoon follow.

This ſo frank and unexpected declaration gave me great confidence in the king; and I told him, if that was his opinion, he might leave the reſt to me, I would ſo manage it that the thing ſhould be brought

about by my means; and I would then satisfy all his scruples, and make him a flourishing prince. But I could not help reflecting with myself, how nearly this distant prince, and his state, copied some of my neighbours in Europe.

CHAP. XI.

Peter's reflections on what he was to perform; settles the method of it; his advice to his son and daughter; globe lights living creatures; takes Maleck into his service; Nasgig discovers to Peter a plot at court; revolt of Gauningrunt.

HAVING now fully entered into the spirit of the business with my own good liking, I was determined to push it vigorously, or perish in the attempt. Have I, says I, so large a field before me now to manifest my Maker in to a whole nation, and under his own call, and to fulfil their own prediction too; and shall I shrink at the possible danger? Or may there not rather be no probability of danger in it? The nation is in distress, the readier therefore to try any remedy for help: Their image has stood idle two hundred years; there has been an old prophecy, or at least if not true, as firmly believed to be true as if it was so; and this, in regard to the people, answers in all respects as well. But why should it not be true? It is better attested by the frequent repetition, from the original delivery to this time, than are many traditions I

have heard of amongſt us chriſtians, which have come out ſpick and ſpan new from the repoſitories of the learned, of twelve, or fifteen hundred years old, little the worſe for lying by; though they are not pretended to have been light all that time, and are undoubted verities the moment they receive the grand ſanction. Then, if any means but fraud or force can gain ſo large a territory to the truth, and I am the only perſon can introduce it, ſhall not I endeavour it? Yes, ſurely; but I am not excluded all advantages neither, for all the works of providence are brought to paſs by appointed means: And indeed was it otherwiſe, what could we call providence? For a peremptory fiat, and it is over, may work a miracle it is true, but will not exhibit the proceedings of providence. Therefore let me conſider in a prudential way how to proceed to the execution of what I am to ſet about; and guide me, providence! I beſeech you, to the end.

Upon the beſt deliberation I could take, I came to the following reſolutions: Firſt, to inſiſt on the abolition of the image worſhip, and to introduce true religion by the fitteſt means I could find opportunity for.

Secondly, as the revolters had been one people with thoſe I would ſerve, and had this prediction amongſt them too, and were intereſted in it, in hopes of its diſtant accompliſhment: So if they came properly to the knowledge, that the perſon prediction of had appeared, and was ready for execution of his purpoſes, it muſt ſtagger their fidelity to their new maſter; and therefore I would find means to let them know it.

Thirdly, that I would not march till I was in [illegible] dition not eaſily to be repulſed; for that would b[illegible]

both the hopes and hearts of my party, and deſtroy my religious ſcheme; and therefore I would get ſome of my cannon.

FOURTHLY, that I would go to the war in my flying chair, and train up a guard for my perſon with piſtols and cutlaſſes.

THESE reſolutions I kept to myſelf, till the moucheratt was over, to ſee firſt how matters would turn out there.

WHILST I waited for the approaching moucheratt, my ſon Tommy and daughter Hallycarnie paid their duties to me. It is ſtrange how ſoon young minds are tainted by bad company. I found them both very glad to ſee me, for every body, they ſaid, told them I was to be their deliverer. They had both got the prophecy by heart, and mentioned the image with all the affection of natural ſubjects. The moment Tommy ſpoke of it to me; hold, ſays I, young man, what is become of thoſe good principles I took ſo much pains to ground you in? Has all my concern for your ſalvation been thrown away upon you? Are you become a reprobate? What! an apoſtate from the faith you inherited by birth right? Is the God I have ſo often declared to you, a wooden one? Anſwer me, or never ſee my face more.

THE child was extremely confounded to ſee me look ſo ſevere, and hear me ſpeak ſo harſh to him. Indeed father, ſays he, I did not willingly offend, or deſign to ſhew any particular regard to the image; for, [illegible]ks to you, I have none; but what I ſaid was only

common diſcourſe in every body's mouth; I meant neither good or harm by it.

TOMMY, ſays I, it is a great fault to run into an error, though in company of multitudes; and where a perſon's principle is ſound at bottom, and founded upon reaſon, no numbers ought to ſhake it. You are young, therefore hearken to me; and you, Heycarnie, whatever you ſhall ſee done by the people of this country, in the worſhip of this idol, do not you imitate it, do not you join in it. Keep the ſound leſſons I have preached to you in mind; and upon every attempt of the ragams, or any other, to draw you aſide to their worſhip, or even to ſpeak or act the leaſt thing in praiſe of this idol, think of me, and my words; pay your adoration to the Supreme Father of ſpirits only, and to no wooden, ſtone, or earthen deity whatſoever.

THE children wept very heartily, and both promiſed me to remember and do as I had told them.

BEING now in my oval chamber, and alone with my children, I had a mind to be informed of ſome things I was almoſt aſhamed to aſk Quilly. Tommy, ſays I, what ſort of fire do they keep in theſe globes? And what are they made of? Daddy, ſays he, yonder is the man ſhifting them, you may go and ſee. Being very curious to ſee how he did it, I went to him; as I came near him, he ſeemed to have ſomething all fire on his arm. What has the man got there, ſays I? Only ſweecoes, ſays Tommy. By this time I came up to him; Friend, ſays I, what are you about? Shifting the ſweecoes, ſir, ſays he, to feed them. What oil do you feed with, ſays I? Oil! ſays he, they will not eat oil

that would kill them all. Why, says I, my lamp is fed with oil.

TOMMY could scarce help laughing himself; but for fear the servant should do so too, pulled me by the sleeve, and desired me to say no more. So turning away with him; Daddy, says he, it is not oil that gives this light, but sweecoes, a living creature; he has got his basket full, and is taking the old ones out to feed them, and putting new ones in; they shift them every half day, and feed them. What, says I, are all those infinite number of globes I see living creatures? No, says he, the globes are only the transparent shell of a bot, like our calibashes, the light comes from the sweecoe within Has that man, says I, got any of them? Yes, says he, you may see them; the king and the Colambs, and indeed every man of note, has a place to breed and feed them in. Pray let us go see them, says I, for that is a curiosity indeed.

TOMMY desired the man to shew me the sweecoes; so he set down his basket, which was a very beautiful resemblance of a common higler's basket, with a handle in the middle, and a division under it, with flaps on each side to lift up and down. It was made of straw coloured small twigs, neatly compacted, but so light as scarce to be of any weight. Opening one of the lids, I could make very little distinction of substances, the bottom seeming all over of a quite white colour. I looking surprised at the light, the man took out one, and would have put it into my hand; but perceiving me shy of it, he assured me it was one of the most innocent things in the world: I then took it, and surveying it, it felt to my touch as smooth and cold as a piece of ice. It was about as long as a large lobworm, but much

thicker. The man ſeeing me admire the brightneſs of its colour, told me that had done its duty, and was going to be fed; but thoſe that were going upon duty were much clearer; and then opening the other lid, thoſe appeared far exceeding the others in brightneſs, and thickneſs too. I aſked what he fed them with? He ſaid leaves and fruit; but graſs when he could get it, which was not often, they were very fond of.

HAVING diſmiſſed my children, I ſent for Naſgig to gain ſome intelligence I wanted to be informed of. The moment I ſaw him, it came into my mind to inquire after my new filgays. He ſaid the king granted my requeſt at the firſt word. I told him then he had ſaved his honour with me, and I was obliged to him; but, ſays I, you told me my bearers ſhould be free too. They are ſo, ſays he. Then there is one thing I want, ſays I and that is to ſee the ſecond bearer on my right hand, who came through without ſhifting. I have a fancy for that fellow, ſays I, to be about my perſon: I like him, and if you can give him a good word, I ſhould be glad to treat with him about it.

MY friend Peter, ſays he, you are a man of penetration, though it ill becomes me to ſay ſo in regard of perſons; but I can ſay that for him, if he likes you as well as you ſeem to like him, he is the truſtieſt fellow in the world; but as he knows his own worth, he would not be ſo to every body, I can tell you that. I do not fear his diſliking me, ſays I, for I make it my maxim to do as I would be done by; and if he is a man of honour, as you ſeem to ſay, he will do the ſame, and we ſhall be ſoon agreed. But, ſays Naſgig, it being now the fourth day ſince he was freed, he may be gone home, perhaps; for he is not of our country, but of

mount Alkoe. If Quilly can find him he will come; ſo he ordered Quilly to ſend for Maleck of mount Alkoe, with orders to come to me.

WE deſcended from one diſcourſe to another, and at length to King Georigetti's affairs; when Naſgig giving a ſigh, ah, Peter, ſays he, we ſhall loiter away our time here till the enemy are upon our backs. There is venom in the graſs; I wiſh my good maſter is not betrayed. By whom? ſays I. By thoſe he little ſuſpects, ſays he. Why, ſays I, they tell me you are much in his favour, if ſo, why do you ſuffer it? I believe, ſays Naſgig, I am in his favour, and may continue in it, if I will join in meaſures to ruin him, but elſe I ſhall ſoon be out of it. You tell me riddles, ſaid I. Theſe things, ſays he, a man talks with his head in his teeth. There is danger in them, Peter; there is danger. You do not ſuſpect me, ſays I, do you? No, ſays he, I know your ſoul too well; but there are three perſons in theſe dominions who will never let my maſter reſt till out of his throne, or in hoximo. I am but lately in favour, but have made as many obſervations, perhaps, as thoſe who have been longer about the king.

NASGIG, ſays I, your concern proceeds from an honeſt heart; do not ſtifle what you have to ſay; if I can council you with ſafety I will do it, if not I will tell you ſo.

PETER, ſays he, Georigetti was the only ſon of a well-beloved father, and aſcended his throne ten years ago, on his deceaſe; but Harlokin, the prince of the revolters, whoſe head is never idle, finding that whiſpers and baſe ſtories ſpread about did not hurt Georigetti, or withdraw his ſubjects affections, has tried a

means to make him undo himself. As how? says I. Why, said he, by closely playing his game he has got one of his relations into the king's service, than whom he could never have chosen a fitter instrument. He by degrees feeding the king's humour, and promising mountains, has pushed into the best places in the kingdom: His name is Barbarsa, a most insolent man, who has had the assurance to corrupt the king's mistress, and has prevailed and brought her over to his interest. O perfidy! says I, is it possible? Yes, says he, and more than that, has drawn in, till now, an honest man, called Nicor; and it has been agreed between them to protract this war, till by their stratagems in procuring the revolt of Gauingrunt, a very large and populous province, and now the barrier between us and the rebels, and two or three more places, they shall have persuaded Georigetti to fly; and then Barbarsa is to be king, and Yaccombourse his queen. A union is then to be struck between him and Harlokin, and peace made, by restoring some of the surrendered provinces. And upon the death of the first of them, or their issue, childless, the survivor, or his issue, is to take the whole. They laugh at your uniting the dominions, and the old prediction.

THESE, said I, Nasgig, are serious things, and, as you say, are not lightly to be talked of; but Nasgig know this, he that conceals them is a traitor. Can you prove this? I have heard them say so, says Nasgig. How, says I, and not discover it? I am as anxious for that as you can be, says he; but for me to be cashiered, slit, and sent to Crashdoorpt, only for meaning well, without power to perfect my good intentions, where would be the benefit to my master or me? When and where did you hear this? says I. Several, and several

times, ſays he, in my own bed. In your own bed, ſays I? I will tell you, ſays he, it ſo happens that when I reſt at the palace, as I am bound to do when on duty, there is a particular bed for me: Now as the whole palace is cut out of one ſolid rock, though Yaccombourſe's apartment at the entrance is at a prodigious diſtance from the entrance to mine, yet my bed, and one in an inner apartment of hers, ſtand cloſe together; the partition indeed is ſtone, but either from the thinneſs of it, or ſome flaw in it I have not yet diſcovered, I can plainly hear every word that is ſpoken. And there it is in their hours of dalliance, when they uſe this bed, that I hear what I have now told you. Say nothing of it, ſays I, but leave the iſſue to me.

By this time the meſſenger returned with Maleck, and he and I ſoon agreeing, I took him into my ſervice.

I WENT to bed as uſual, but could get no reſt, Naſgig's ſtory ingroſſing my whole attention, I was reſolved however to be better informed, before I acquainted the king of it. But riſing pretty early next morning, the king came into my chamber leaning upon Barbarſa, to tell me he had received an expreſs that Gaungrunt had revolted. Peter, ſays he, behold a diſtreſſed monarch, nay an undone monarch. Great ſir, ſays Barbarſa, you afflict yourſelf too much; here is Peter come to aſſiſt you, and he will ſettle all your concerns, never fear. I eyed the man, and, though prejudice may hang an honeſt perſon, found him a villain in his heart; for even while he was forcing a feeling tone of affection, he was ſtaring at my laced hat and feather that lay on the ſeat, by which I was ſure nothing could be at a greater diſtance than his heart and tongue. His ſham

concern put me within a moment of ſiezing him in the king's preſence; but his majeſty, at that inſtant ſpeaking, diverted me.

BEFORE the king left me, I told him, having certain propoſitions to make to the moucheratt next day, it was poſſible they might require time to conſider of them; wherefore it would be proper, at this critical time, to let them meet every other day, buſineſs or none, till this affair was over. The king ordered Barbarſa to ſee it was ſo, and then we parted.

CHAP. XII.

Hold a moucheratt; ſpeeches of Ragams and Colambs; Peter ſettles religion; informs the king of a plot; ſends Najgig to the ſhip for cannon.

ATTENDING at the moucheratt to-day, I happened to be ſeated within two paces of the idol. There was the moſt numerous aſſembly that had ever been ſeen; and when all was quiet, the king opened with ſignifying the revolt of Gauingrunt, the approach of the enemy, and no forces in the field to ſtop them. This he ſet forth in terms ſo moving, that the whole aſſembly were melted into ſighs; till one of the Colambs riſing up, ſays he, His majeſty hath ſet forth his affairs in ſuch a manner, and I am ſatisfied a true one, that it becomes us all to be vigilant. We all ſeem to have, and I believe have great faith in the remedy this day to be propoſed to us, in anſwer to our ancient prediction.

And as I doubt not but glumm Peter is the man; ſo I doubt not, but through his management, we ſhall ſtill receive help; but let us conſider if we might not have prevented theſe preſſing evils, and eſpecially this laſt, by ſpeedier preparations againſt them. What province, or member of a ſtate will not revolt to a numerous hoſt juſt ready to devour them, if they can receive no aſſiſtance from their head? for by my certain knowledge, his majeſty had ordered this almoſt a year ago, and not a man gone yet. Can we expect Peter to go ſingly to fight an army? Did your prediction ſay he ſhould go alone? No, he ſhall ſlay, that is, he and his army; what is done by them being always attributed to their general. Inquire therefore into your paſt conduct, ſend Peter your general, and truſt to the great image.

His majeſty then ſaid, if there had been any remiſſneſs in executing his commands, he believed it was done with a view to his ſervice; but a more proper opportunity might be found for an enquiry of that nature. As for the preſent moucheratt, it was called ſolely to propoſe to Peter the execution of the remaining part of the prediction; or at leaſt ſuch part of it, as ſeems now or never, to wait its accompliſhment.

HERE aroſe a ragam, and told the aſſembly in the name of himſelf and brethren, That the prediction had never yet been applicable to any one perſon till glumm Peter arrival; and that his ſagacity of itſelf was a ſufficient recommendation of him to the guidance of the enterprize; and requeſted that glumm Peter might forthwith be declared protector of the army, and ſet forward with it, that the ſtate might receive ſafety, and the great image its proper honour.

I COULD now hold out no longer, but ſtanding up, made my ſpeech in the following manner, or very near it. 'Mighty king, you reverend ragams, and honourable Colambs, with the good people of this auguſt aſſembly: I am come hither, led by the force of your own prediction, at the requeſt of his majeſty and the ſtates, at the peril of my life, to accompliſh things ſaid to be predicted of mé glumm Peter. If then you have a prediction; if then your prediction deſcribes me, and the circumſtances of theſe times; it conſiſting of ſeveral parts, they ought ſeriouſly to be weighed, that I may know when and where I am to begin my operation; and when and where to leave off: For in predictions, the whole is to be accompliſhed as much as any member of it.'

'IT is ſaid, I ſhall deſtroy the traitor of the weſt; I am ready to enter upon it, ſettle the ancient limits of your monarchy; are you willing therefore that ſhould be done? ye or nay?' Then every one anſwered yea. 'And by common conſent, eſtabliſh what the old ragam would have taught you.' Here the king roſe up; but Barbarſa giving him a touch, for every one waited to be guided by the voice of the ragams; he ſat down again, and no one anſwering yea, I again put the ſame queſtion, and told them as it was their own concern, I would have an anſwer before I proceeded. One of the ragams then roſe and ſaid, that part of the prediction was too looſe to be relied on; for it was to ſettle what he would have taught: Now who knows, ſays he, what he would have taught? The aſſembly pauſed a conſiderable time; and juſt as I was opening my mouth to ſpeak, an old and venerable ragam roſe; ſays he, I am ſorry at my years to find the truth wants an advocate; my age and infirmities might

well have excuſed me from ſpeaking in this aſſembly; ſo many of my brethren being preſent, younger and better qualified for that purpoſe than myſelf; but as we are upon a ſacred thing, and leaſt, as I find none of them care to declare the truth, I ſhould alſo be thought to conſent to its ſuppreſſion, if I ſat ſilent and ſuffered it to be hid under a quibble: I muſt beg leave to be heard a few words. My brother who ſpoke laſt, ſays the words are too looſe, which ſay, "and by common con-"ſent eſtabliſh what I would have taught;" but I beg leave to think it far otherwiſe; for we all know what he would have taught, and the memory of that hath been as exactly kept as the prediction: For how could our anceſtors have oppoſed his doctrine, but from hearing and diſapproving it; And we all know, not only the prediction, but the doctrine hath been punctually handed down to us; though woe be to us, we have not proclaimed it as we have the prediction; and let me tell you, when you my brethren ſeverally come to my years, and have but a ſingle ſtep further to hoximo, you will wiſh you had taught it, as I do; who do believe and approve it.

THE poor old man having ſpoke as long as his breath and ſpirits would permit him, ſat down; and I again reſumed the queſtion, as I now thought on a much better foundation than before, and was immediately told by another ragam, that there would be no end of the aſſembly if we conſidered every point at once; for we might next go upon what countries we ſhould conquer, and of whom to demand tribute; which would be debating about the fruit, before the ſeed was ſown. But his opinion was, to go on and quell the rebellion, and reſtore the monarchy, and then go upon the other points.

I TOLD them, if they made ſo light of the prediction, as not to declare publicly, ſince they knew it, what the ragam would have taught; it ill became me to be more zealous in their own concerns than they were themſelves; and I ſhould imagine there was very little truth in any part of it, and would never hazard my life for their ſakes, who would not ſpeak the truth to ſave the kingdom; and deſired leave of the ſtates for my departure; for I was not a perſon I told them to be cajoled into any thing. I undertook it at firſt voluntarily; and no man could, or ſhould compel me to it; my life they might take, but my honour they ſhould never ſtain; though I was aſſured I could eaſily, with their concurrence, complete all that related to them.

THE ſenior Colamb immediately riſing, deſired me to have a little patience, and not to leave the aſſembly, for I was going out, till I had heard him.

HERE is, ſays he, this day a thing ſtarted, which I think every whit as much concerns us all, and the body, and every member of the people to know, as it does Peter; and I am ſurprized, unleſs the preſent ragams believe what their predeceſſor would have taught to be better than what they now teach, for nothing elſe can make us conſent to it, that they ſhould ſcruple to let us know it, and keep us ignorant, who are worſhippers as well as themſelves, of any matter which ſo nearly concerns us to know. I am for obliging the ragams to declare the truth. If this be a true prediction, all the relatives to it are true; and I inſiſt that we hear it.

THIS ſpeech imboldened ſeveral others, and all the populace ſiding with the Colambs out of curioſity, cryed out to know it.

PERCEIVING the ragams ſtill huſh, I roſe and beckoning the populace to ſilence; 'Mighty king, 'you honourable Colambs, and you good people, 'ſays I, for it is to you I now ſpeak, hear me with at-'tention. You think, perhaps, that the ſuppreſſion of 'the truth by your ragams, (charged to their teeth by 'the moſt reverend of their whole body, whoſe infirmi-'ties rendering him unable, though his will is good, to 'declare this ſecret to you,) will prevent the know-'ledge of that truth your old ragam would have taught; 'but you are miſtaken, and that you may know I do 'not come here at a venture to try if I can relieve 'you, but with an aſſurance of doing it if you conſent: 'I muſt let you know, from me, what the ragam would 'have taught. The ragam would have demoliſhed this 'trumpery piece of dirt, this grimalkin, ſet out with 'horrid face and colour to fright children; this, I ſay, 'he would have demoliſhed, being aſſured it could 'neither do good or hurt, give joy or grief to any 'man, or ſerve any other purpoſe whatſoever, but to 'procure a maintenance to a ſet of men, who know 'much better than they dare to tell you. Can any of 'you believe this ſtupid piece of earth hears me?' Some of the ragams cried Yes. 'And that he can re-'venge any affront I ſhall give him?' Again, Yes to be ſure. 'Let him then if he dare,' ſays I, whipping out my cutlaſs, and with the backſide of it ſtriking its head off. 'This, ſays I, O glamms, is what the ra-'gam knew, and what I defy them to deny. Now, 'ſays I, I will further ſhew you, to whom the old ragam 'would have taught you to make your petitions, and 'pay your adoration; and that is to the Supreme 'Being, maker of heaven and earth, of us and all 'things; who provides for us meat and drink, and all 'things; by cauſing the earth, which he has made, to

'produce things neceſſary for our uſe. That Being 'whom you have heard of by the name of Collwarr, 'and are taught, at preſent, to be afraid to ſpeak to. 'And I appeal to your own hearts, if many of you 'have ever thought of him. Again, ſays I, let any 'thing in the ſhape of man, that gives himſelf leave to 'conſider at all, only tell me, if what he can make, 'and does make with his own hands, hath not more 'occaſion to depend on him as its maker, than he on 'that? Why then ſhould not we depend upon, and 'pray to our Maker?

'You greatly miſtake me, O glumms, ſays I, if you 'imagine I would have all thoſe reverend men turned 'out of employment as uſeleſs. No, I find they know 'too much of what is valuable; and therefore thoſe 'who are willing to continue in the ſervice of the 'mouch, and faithfully to teach you the old ragam's 'doctrine, and ſuch further lights of the great Being 'as they ſhall hereafter receive, let them continue 'your ragams ſtill; and let others be choſen, and train-'ed up in that doctrine.

HERE the poor old man got up again with much difficulty. Mr Peter, ſays he, you are the man predicted of, you have declared the old ragam's mind, and all my brethren know it.

FINDING I had the populace on my ſide, for I did not doubt the king and Colambs. I put the queſtion to the ragams: 'Reverend, ſays I, you ſee your predic-'tion this day about to be fulfilled; for if it is a true 'one, no force of man can withſtand it. You ſee your 'image diſgraced; you ſee, and I appeal to you all for 'the truth of it, that what the ragam would have

'taught, has without your aſſiſtance been diſcloſed. I 'therefore would have you the firſt to break the bon-'dage of idolatry, and turn to the true Collwarr; as it 'will be ſo much glory to you. Will you, and which 'of you, from henceforth ſerve Collwarr, and no lon-'ger worſhip an idol? Such of you as will do ſo, let them 'continue in the mouch: If none of you will, it ſhall 'be my buſineſs to qualify a ſufficient number of true 'ragams, to form a ſucceſſion for that purpoſe. The 'iſſue of this great affair, depends upon your anſwers.' They waited ſometime for a ſpokeſman to begin; and ſo ſoon as he was able to get up, the poor old ragam ſaid, I will continue in it, and do all the little good I can; and bleſſed be the day this prediction is fulfilled, to ſucceeding generations. I have lived long enough to have ſeen this. Then the reſt of the ragams, one by one, followed his example. And thus, with prodigious acclamations both of the ragams and people, ended the great affair of religion.

I NOW more and more believed the truth of the prediction; and told them I ſhould have occaſion for ſeven hundred men before I ſet out againſt the rebels; and deſired that they might be commanded by Naſgig. This was readily granted. I then told them, as I purpoſed to act nothing without their concurrence, I deſired the Colambs would remain in the city till I ſat out, that they might be readily called together.

I THEN deſired I might be quite private from company, till I departed.

I TOOK Naſgig home with me, and when we came there, my dear friend, ſays he, what have you done today! You have cruſhed a power hitherto immoveable;

and I ſhall never more think any thing too difficult for you to attempt. Naſgig, ſays I, I am glad it is over. And now, ſays I, you muſt enter on a new employ; but firſt, can you provide me fifty honeſt faithful glumms, for a particular expedition? they muſt be ſenſible, cloſe, and temporizing. He ſaid he would, and come to me again.

I THEN deſired a private audience of the king; who, on ſeeing me, began upon my ſucceſs at the moucheratt. I told his majeſty, if I alone, and a ſtranger, could gain ſuch influence there; I might have had much more, if he had joined me; eſpecially as he had told me he gave no credit to the image: and that I expected he would have appeared on my ſide. Ah! Peter, ſays he, monarchs neither ſee, hear, or perceive with their own eyes, ears, or underſtandings. I would willingly have done it, but Barbarſa prevented me, by aſſuring me it would be my ruin; and as he is my boſom friend, what reproaches much I have ſuffered, if it had gone amiſs? Nay, I will tell you; that he and Nicor are of opinion, that your coming hither, which is looked upon by us all as ſuch a bleſſing, will one day undo me: For, ſay they, though he may perform what you expect from him, it is not to be ſuppoſed he ſhould ſuffer it to redound to you. No, ſay they, if he can do theſe great things, he can ſoon ſet you aſide. Thus, though I have no doubt of you, is my ſpirit waſting within me through perpetual fears and jealouſies; and I cannot get theſe men, who knowing all my ſecrets are feared by me, into my own way of thinking.

MIGHTY ſir, ſays I, do not think I came hither to poſſeſs, but redreſs a kingdom. I lived far more to my eaſe in my grotto, than I can in this palace; but I now

deſire you, drawing my ſword and putting it into his hand, to pierce this heart's blood, and make yourſelf eaſy in my death, rather than ſuffering me to ſurvive, live in diſtruſt of me. No, great king, ſays I, it is not I that would injure you; but, though I have been ſo ſhort a time in your dominions, I find there are thoſe, who would; and will too, unleſs you exert the monarch and ſhake off thoſe harpies, which lying always at your ear, are ever buzzing diſquiet and miſchief to you. Peter, ſays he, what do you mean? ſure I have not more traitors in my ſtate? Your majeſty has, ſays I. How can you prove it? ſays he. But pray inform me who they are? I came not hither great king, ſays I, to turn informer, but reformer; and ſo far as that is neceſſary in order to this, I will give you ſatisfaction. I only deſire you will wholly guide yourſelf by my direction for three days; and you ſhall be able to help yourſelf to all the information you can require, without my telling you. In the mean time, appear no more thoughtful than uſual, or in any other way alter your accuſtomed habits.

NASGIG having ſent me the fifty men, I aſked them if they were to be truſted, and if they could carefully and artfully execute a commiſſion I had to charge them with. They aſſured me they would, I told them I would let them into my deſign, which would be the beſt inſtructions I could give them, and let the management alone to them.

MY confidence in them made them twice as diligent as all the particular directions in the world would have done; ſo I only told them I had a mind the revolted towns, and alſo the enemy's army, ſhould know that the perſon ſo long ago predicted of was now at Bran-

dleguarp, and had, as the firſt ſtep towards reducing them, and killing the traitor Harlokin, already altered their religion to the old ragam's plan; and that they had nothing now to expect but deſtruction to themſelves, as ſoon as I appeared againſt them with my unknown fire and ſmoke, which I always carried with me; and that the thing was looked upon to be as good as done already at Brandleguarp; and then to ſlip away again unperceived. They all promiſed me exact performance, and went off.

NASGIG then coming in, I told him he was now under my command, and muſt take ſix hundred glumms with him to Graundevolet, tell Youwarkee to ſhew him my ſhip, and then he muſt bring me the things I had deſcribed to her by the name of cannon; he muſt bring them by ropes, as I was brought; and bring powder, which ſhe would direct him to, and about fifty heavy balls which lay in the room with the powder. I told him, if he thought he ſhould not have men enough, he muſt take more; and muſt be as expeditious as was conſiſtent with ſafety. I deſired him to tell Youwarkee I hoped in a ſhort time to ſend for her, and all the family, over to me. And now Naſgig, ſays I, my orders are finiſhed; but, ſays I, the king! I muſt aſſiſt that good man. I therefore want to know the particular times Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe uſually meet. That, ſays he, is every night when ſhe is not with the king; for he is exceſſive fond of her, and ſeldom lies without her; but whenever he does Barbarſa is admitted to her. And how can I know, ſays I, when ſhe will, or will not lie with the king? When ſhe is to lie with him, ſays he, the king never ſups without her. Now, ſays I, you muſt ſhew me your lodging, that I may find it in your abſence; and give orders to the

guard to let me, and whoever comes with me, enter at any time. He then took me to his chamber; but I paſſed through ſo many rooms, galleries, and paſſages, that I was ſure I ſhould never find it again, ſo I aſked him if Maleck knew the way; and he aſſuring me he did, I took my leave of him, and he ſet out for Graundevolet.

CHAP. XIII.

The king hears Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe diſcourſe on the plot; they are impeached by Peter at a moucheratt; condemned and executed; Nicor ſubmits, and is releaſed.

I HAD now ſeveral important irons in the fire, and all to be ſtruck whilſt hot: There was the ſecuring religion, ſowing ſedition amongſt the enemy, tripping up the heels of two miniſters, and a ſhe favourite, and tranſporting artillery through the air ſome hundred leagues; either of which failing, might have been of exceeding bad conſequence; but as the affair of the miniſters now lay next at hand, I entered upon that in the following manner.

THE king coming to me the next day, as by appointment; and having aſſured me he had hinted nothing to any one, no not to Barbarſa, or Yaccombourſe, told me, that Barbarſa had given orders for ſtopping Naigig and his men; and had perſuaded him not to be in ſuch a

haſte in ſuffering me to do as I pleaſed, but to ſhew his authority, and keep me under. Says I, your majeſty's ſafety is ſo near my heart, that even want of confidence in me ſhall not make me decline my endeavours to ſerve you. But have you ſuffered him to ſtop Naſgig? No, ſays he, Naſgig was gone ſometime before he ſent. O ſir! ſays I, you do not half know the worth of that man; but you ſhall hereafter, and will reward him accordingly. But now, ſir, ſays I, to what we meet upon; if you will, as I told you, but comply with me for three days, without aſking queſtions, I will ſhew you the greateſt traitors in your dominions, and put them into your power too. He promiſed me again he would. Then, ſir, ſays I, you muſt not ſend to Yaccombourſe to ſup with you to-night. Nor lie with me? No, ſays I. Pray what hurt can ariſe to my affairs from her, ſays he? Sir, ſays I, you promiſed me to aſk no queſtions. Agreed, agreed, ſays he. Then, ſays I, pleaſe to meet me at Naſgig's lodgings without being perceived, if you can; at leaſt without notice taken. Good ſays he; and when you are there, ſee or hear what you will you muſt not ſay a word till you are retired again; all which the king engaging to perform, we parted till evening.

I CALLED Maleck, and aſked if he knew the way to Naſgig's lodging. He told me very well; and the time being come, he conducted me thither; where I had not waited long before the king came, moſt of the court being in bed. I deſired the king to ſtay in the outer room till I went into the bed-chamber two or three times, and I thought we muſt have put it off till another night; but liſtening once again, I found they were come; ſo I called the king and led him to the place; intreating him, whatever he heard to keep his patience,

or he would ruin all. We firſt heard much amorous diſcourſe between Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe, and then the enſuing dialogue.

Yac. my deareſt Barbarſa, what was all that uproar at the moucheratt the other day?

Bar. Nothing, my love, but that mad fellow Peter, who ſets up for a conjurer, and wants us all to dance to his pipe.

Yac. I heard he overcame the ragams at an argument about the image.

Bar. Why I do not know how that was but it was the doating old ragam did their buſineſs; and truly the king's fingers itched to be on Peter's ſide, but I gave him a judicious nod, and you know he durſt not diſpleaſe ſo dear a friend as I am; ha, ha, ha; am not I a ſad fellow, my love, to talk ſo of my king?

Yac. He that wants but one ſtep to a throne, is almoſt a king's fellow.

Bar. And that but a ſhort one too, my dear Yaccee; but I muſt get rid of that Naſgig, though I think I have almoſt ſpoiled him with the king too. I do not love your thinking raſcals; that fellow thinks more than I do, Yaccee.

Yac. He will never think to ſo good purpoſe, I believe; but how goes couſin Harlokin on, I find Gauingrunt is gone over.

Bar And ſo ſhall Bazin, Iſtel, Pezele, and Ginkatt, too, my dear, for I am at work there; and then good

night, my poor king Georigetti; thou ſhalt be adviſed to fly, and I will keep the throne warm for thee. I do not ſee but king Barbarſa, and Queen Yaccombourſe, ſound much better than Georigetti. Well, my dear, whenever we come to ſovereignty, which now cannot be long, if Nicor has but played his part well, for I have not had an account of his ſucceſs yet; I ſay, when we come into power, never let us be above minding our own affairs, or ſuffer ourſelves to be led by the noſe, as this poor inſignificant king does. For, in ſhort, he may as well be a king of mats, as a king of fleſh, if he will not uſe his faculties, but ſuffer me to make a fool of him thus; and I ſhould be a fool indeed to neglect it, when he thinks it the greateſt piece of ſervice I can do him.

Yac. Come, come, my dear, let us enjoy ourſelves like king and queen till we come to the dignity.

FINDING a pauſe, the king, who had admirably kept his temper, even beyond imagination, ſtole into the outer room. Peter, ſays he, I thank you, you have ſhewn me myſelf. What fools are we kings! in endeavouring to make others happy, how miſerable do we make ourſelves! how eaſily are we deceived by the deſigning flattery of thoſe below us? Ungrateful villain! degenerate ſtrumpet! I hate you both. Peter, ſays he, give me your ſword; I will deſtroy them both in the very act.

HOLD, ſir, ſays I, your majeſty has heard ſufficient to found a true judgment upon; but kings ſhould not be executioners, or act by paſſion and revenge; but as you would puniſh that in others, ſo carefully avoid it yourſelf. You, who are in ſo exalted a ſtation, as al-

ways to have it in your power to puniſh a known crime in individuals, have not that neceſſity to prompt you to a violent act, that private perſons have; to whom, it may be difficult to obtain juſtice. Therefore, my advice is, that you ſummon the Colambs to-morrow; when Barbarſa and Nicor cannot fail to attend; and I would likewiſe deſire Yaccombourſe to be there, you having great propoſals to made to the ſtates which you ſhall want her to hear. I will in the mean time prepare the ſervants under Quilly, and order Maleck with another poſſee to attend, as by your command, to execute your orders given by me; and I myſelf will empeach thoſe bad perſons in public; and Nicor, if he will not ingenuouſly confeſs what commiſſion he was charged with from Barbarſa, ſhall be put to the torture I direct, till he diſcovers it.

THE king was very well pleaſed with this method; ſo I ordered Quilly, as from the king, to bring all my ſervants to the aſſembly, appointing him his place. And Maleck, to ſelect me fifty ſtout perſons, and to wait to execute my orders on a ſignal given. So ſoon as the aſſembly met, I told them, ſince I had concerned myſelf to their affairs, I had made it my buſineſs to ſearch into the cauſe of their calamities; and finding ſome of the traitors were now approached, not only near to, but even into the capital city; his majeſty had therefore ordered me to aſk their advice, what puniſhment was adequate, in their judgments, to the crime of conſpiring againſt him and the ſtate, and holding treaſonable correſpondence with his enemies, under the ſhew of his greateſt friends.

I STOPPED, and looking at Barbarſa, he turned as pale as aſhes, and was riſing to ſpeak; when the ſenior

Colamb declared, If any ſuch thing could be made appear, the common puniſhment of Craſhdoorpt was too trivial; but they deſerved to be droped alive, either into hoximo, or mount Alkoe. The ſeveral Colambs all declaring the ſame to be their judgment, and even thoſe to be too mild for their deſerts, I then ſtept up to Barbarſa, who ſat on the king's left hand, as did Yaccombourſe on his right; and telling them and Nicor they were all priſoners of ſtate; I delivered Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe in cuſtody to Quilly and his men, and Nicor, to Maleck and his men; ordering them into ſeparate appartments, with ſtrict commands that neither ſhould ſpeak to the other, upon pain of the laſt pronounced judgment.

BARBARSA would have ſpoke, and called out to the king, begging him not to deſert ſo faithful a ſervant, for the inſinuations of ſo vile a man as Peter. But the king only told him, the vile man would be made appear preſently, and he hoped would meet his deſerts.

I THEN ſtood up, and told the aſſembly the whole of what we had heard, how it firſt came to be diſcovered, and that the king himſelf had been an ear witneſs of it; which the king confirming, the whole aſſembly rang with confuſion; and revenge and indignation appeared in every face.

I THEN propoſed as we knew not what that ſecret commiſſion was which Nicor was charged with, having enough againſt the reſt, that Nicor might be brought forth; and, upon refuſal to anſwer, be put to the torture.

NICOR appearing before the aſſembly; I told him, I was commanded by the king, to aſk him what commiſſion he was charged with by Barbarſa, and to whom. I told him the ſafeſt way for his life, his honour, and his country, was to make a true confeſſion at firſt; or I had authority to put him to the torture: For, as for ſlitting and baniſhment, as they were too ſlight to atone for his offence, he might reſt ſatisfied his would be of another ſort, if he heſitated at delivering the thing in its full truth.

MY prelude terrifying him; he openly confeſſed, that his laſt commiſſion was to ſeveral towns, as from the king, and with his gripſack, to order their ſubmiſſion to Harlokin; the king not being in any condition to relieve them; and that as ſoon as they had ſubmitted, Harlokin would be let into this city, which could not ſtand againſt him.

HE alſo declared, that it had been agreed, and the boundaries ſettled, how far Barbarſa, who was to be declared king, and marry Yaccombourſe, ſhould govern, and how far Harlokin. That Barbarſa was to be ſtiled king of the eaſt, and Harlokin king of the weſt, and that either of them, on the other's dying childleſs, was to inherit the whole monarchy.

THE king declaring this to be all true, and that by my procurement he heard it all mentioned but the laſt night, between Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe, as they were ſolacing themſelves in bed; the whole aſſembly ordered them to be brought out, carried with cords about their necks, and precipitated into mount Alkoe.

I THEN begged they might be ſuffered to ſpeak for themſelves before execution; and acquainting them ſeverally with the evidence; I firſt aſked Barbarſa what he had to ſay againſt his ſentence; he declared his ambition, and the eaſineſs of his maſter's temper, had inſtigated him to attempt what had been charged upon him; having, as he thought, a fair opportunity of ſo doing. I then aſked Yaccombourſe the ſame queſtion; ſhe anſwered me, her ambition had been her ſole governor from a child, and I had done my worſt in preventing the progreſs of that; and whatever elſe I could do, was not worth her notice; but to have reigned, ſays ſhe, with ſome emotion, was worth the lives of millions, and over balanced every thing.

I PLEADED hard for Nicor, as I perceived him to be only the favourite's favourite, and not in the ſcrape for his own views, more than what he might merit from his new maſter: And, as he had declared the truth, and I believed I might make further uſe of him, I obtained that he might be only committed to me; and that I might have liberty of pardoning or ſlitting, as I ſaw fit. And, as I expected, he afterwards proved very uſeful to me and my deſigns, and I pardoned him.

BEFORE the aſſembly roſe, a party of the natives of mount Alkoe were ordered to convey Yaccombourſe and Barbarſa to the mountain, ſlit their graundees, and drop them there. And thus ended the lives of theſe two aſpiring perſons.

WHEN I came home, I called Nicor before me. You know, ſays I, Nicor, you are obliged to me for this moment of your life; but I do not remind you of it for any return I want to myſelf; but as you are ſen-

ſible my endeavours are to ſerve this ſtate, I offer you life and freedom, upon condition you employ your utmoſt diligence to repair your paſt conduct, by a free declaration of every thing in your power, that may be for the benefit of the kingdom; as you know the ſprings by which all theſe bad movements have been ſet at work. And I deſire your opinion, how beſt to counteract the ſchemes formed, and redreſs the evils.

NICOR being fully convinced of his error, and having loſt his patron, was very ſubmiſſive; and declared, he believed none of the provinces would have gone over to Harlokin, unleſs they had thought it had been by the king's order Barbarſa acted; which by hearing his gripſack, they made no doubt of. He adviſed to ſend expreſſes, with the king's gripſack, to ſuch places as had lately ſubmitted, and to ſuch as were about it, to put a ſtop to them. I told him I had done that; but not by the gripſack, ſays he, and unleſs they ſee and hear that, they will give no credit to the meſſage. He then gave me ſome particular hints in other affairs, of no mean conſequence; and ſeeing him truly under concern, and to my thinking ſincere in what he ſaid, I told him, I was an abſolute enemy to confinement, and if any perſon of repute would engage he ſhould be at forthcoming upon all occaſions, that I might have recourſe to him, I would let him have his liberty.

POOR Nicor, as it commonly happens to great men in diſgrace, finding himſelf abandoned by all his friends, after trying every body; dropping ſome tears, told me next morning, he was highly ſenſible of what a dye his offences had been; for that not one amongſt all his former friends would even look upon him in his preſent circumſtances; wherefore he muſt ſubmit to fate.

NICOR having borne a good character before seduced by Barbarsa; and knowing that an obliged enemy often becomes the sincerest friend; I prest him again to try his acquaintance. He told me every body was shy in engaging in such an affair; and that he had rather suffer himself, than meanly to intreat any one into an unwilling compliance. Come, Nicor, says I, will you be your own security to me? may I take your own word; He said, he could not expect that; for as the terror of sitting lay over him, and in my hands too, he could not answer, but he might deceive me, in case he should conceive I had a design against him; which I myself too might have from a mistaken motive.

WHY then, Nicor, says I, you are free; now use your own discretion. I think you will never cause my judgment to be impeached for what I have done; but if you do, I cannot condemn myself for it, and hope I shall have no reason to repent it.

NICOR fell at my feet, embraced them, and was so overcome with my generosity to him, that I could with difficulty prevail on him to rise again; saying he was now, more than ever, ashamed to see my face. I told him, I had not done with him; but would use him henceforth as my friend; and ordered him to call upon me daily, for I might have several occasions for him; and truly, next to Nasgig, he proved the usefullest man in the kingdom.

CHAP. XIV.

Naſgig returns with the cannon; Peter informs him of the execution; appoints him a guard; ſettles the order of his march againſt Harlokin; combat between Naſgig and the rebel general; the battle; Peter returning with Harlokin's head, is met by a ſweecoan; a public feſtival; ſlavery aboliſhed.

THE tenth day Naſgig arrived, whilſt I happened to be in the king's garden; and hearing the trumget coming before, I called out to him, to give Naſgig notice where I was, and to deſire him to alight there.

AFTER ceremonies paſt, and I had enquired after my wife and children, and his anſwers had informed me of their healths: Well, ſays Naſgig, my friend, am I to live or die? Explain yourſelf, ſays I. Nay I only mean, ſays he, have you diſcovered me to the king? Pardon me, ſays I, dear Naſgig, I muſt own the truth, I have. Then, ſays he, I ſuppoſe his majeſty has no more commands for me. No, ſays I, it is not ſo bad as that neither. But pray, ſays he, what ſays Barbarſa to it? O! nothing at all, ſays I, quite quiet. Nor Yaccombourſe; did you diſcover her baſeneſs to the king? Yes, ſays I; and the king behaved like a king upon the occaſion. And where are they now, ſays he? Only in mount Alkoe, ſays I. Mount Alkoe! replies he; what do you mean by that? how can they be in mount Alkoe? did they go of their own accords? They fled off, I ſuppoſe, with ropes about their necks, ſays I, as your criminals go to Craſhdoorpt. Are they ſlit too,

ſays he? no, ſays I, but ſlipt, I will aſſure you. Come, my good friend, I will let you into the hiſtory of it; and then I told him all that had happened, and the king's ſatisfaction at the judgment of the moucheratt. And now, ſays I, Naſgig, you may call yourſelf a favourite, I promiſe you; for his majeſty enjoys himſelf but to greet you on your return. But have a care of power; moſt grow giddy with it, and the next thing to that, is a fall. Pray, ſays he, what is become of Nicor? is he under the ſame condemnation? No, ſays I, Nicor is now, by my means, abſolutely free; and no two greater than he and I. I told him then my proceedings with him: He was glad of it, for he ſaid, Nicor he believed was honeſt at bottom.

By this time up came the cannon; and truly, had my countrymen but the graundee to convey their cannon at ſo eaſy an expence from place to place, the whole world would not ſtand before us. They brought me five cannon, and three ſwivel guns, and a larger quantity of ammunition than I had ſpoken for.

I INTRODUCED Naſgig to the king upon his return, as the perſon to whoſe conduct the ſafe arrival of my cannon was owing. His majeſty embracing him, told him, the ſervice he had done him was ſo great in the affair of Bârbarſa, and his management of it ſo prudent, he ſhould from henceforth take him into his peculiar confidence and eſteem.

NASOIO thanked his majeſty for his acceptance of that act of his duty; and deſired to know when he pleaſed the operations for the campaign ſhould begin. Aſk my father, ſays the king; do you conduct the war, and let him conduct you.

THEN Nasgig desired to know, what number of troops would be requisite. I asked him what number the enemy had; he said about thirty thousand. Then, says I, take you six only, besides the bearers of me and the artillery; and pick me out fifty of the best men you have, as a guard for my person, and send them to me.

I SHEWED these men my cutlasses and pistols, and shewed them the use and management of them; and says I, as our enemies fight with pikes, keep you at a distance first; and when you would assault, toss by the pike with your hand, and closing in, have at the graundee; and this edge, shewing them the sharpness of it, will strip it down from shoulder to heel, you need strike but once for it; but be sure come near enough. Or, says I, if you find it difficult to turn aside the pike, give it one smart stroke with this, it will cut it in two, and then the point being gone, it will be useless.

THESE instructions, says I, if rightly observed, will make us conquerors.

THE next thing was to settle the order of my march, which I did in the following manner; and taking leave of the king, I set out.

FIRST, Ten companies of one hundred men, including officers, with each a gripsack, in ten double lines, fifty a-breast.

SECONDLY, Four hundred bearers of the cannon, with two hundred to the right, the like to the left, as relays.

THIRDLY, Two hundred men with the ammunition, ſtores, hatchets, and other implements.

FOURTHLY, Fifty body guards, in two lines.

FIFTHLY, Myſelf borne with eight, with twelve on the right, and as many on the left, for relays.

SIXTHLY, Two thouſand men in columns, on each ſide the cannon, and me; fifty in a line, double lines.

SEVENTHLY, One thouſand men in the rear, fifty in a line, double lines.

I CONSULTED with Naſgig, how Harlokin's army lay, that I might avoid the revolted towns, rather chooſing to take them in my return; for my deſign was to encounter Harlokin firſt; and I did not doubt if I conquered him, but the towns would ſurrender of courſe.

WHEN we arrived within a ſmall flight of his army, I cauſed a halt at a proper place for my cannon; and having pitched them, which I did by ſeveral flat ſtones one on another to a proper elevation; I loaded them, and alſo my ſmall arms, conſiſting of ſix muſkets, and three brace of piſtols; and placing my army, two thouſand juſt behind me, two thouſand to my right, and the ſame number to my left; I gave a ſtrict command for none of them to ſtir forwards without orders; which Naſgig, who ſtood juſt behind me, was to give. I then ſent a defiance to Harlokin by a gripſack; who ſent me word, he fought for a kingdom, and would accept it; and as I learnt afterwards, he was glad I did; for ſince the intelligence I had ſcattered in his army,

they had in great numbers deſerted him, and he was afraid it would have proved general. I then putting the end of a match into a piſtol-pan with a little powder, by flaſhing, lighted it; and this I put under my chair, for I ſat in that, with my muſkets three on each ſide, a piſtol in my right hand, and five more in my girdle. In this manner I waited Harlokin's coming, and in about an hour we ſaw the van of his army, conſiſting of about five thouſand men, who flew in five layers, one over another. I had not loaded my cannon with ball, but ſmall ſized ſtones, about ſixty in each; and ſeeing the length of their line, I ſpread my cannons mouths ſomewhat wider than their breaches, and then taking my obſervation by a bright ſtar, for there was a clear dawn all round the horizon, I obſerved, as I retired to my chair, how that ſtar anſwered to the elevation of my cannon; and when the foremoſt ranks, who not ſeeing my men ſtir, were approaching almoſt over me to fall on them, and had come to my pitch; I fired two pieces of my ordnance at once, and ſo mauled them, that there dropped about ninety upon the firſt diſcharge, together with their commander; the reſt being in flight, and ſo cloſe together, not being able to turn faſt enough to fly, being ſtopped by thoſe behind them, not only hindred thoſe behind from turning about, but clogged up their own paſſage: Seeing them in ſuch a cluſter, I ſo ſucceſsfully fired two more pieces, that I brought down double the number of the firſt ſhot; and then giving the word to fall on, my cutlaſs-guard, and the pikemen did prodigious execution. But fearing the main body ſhould advance before we had got in order again, I commanded them to fall back to their former ſtations, and to let the remainder of the enemy go off.

THIS did me more good in the event, than if I had killed twice as many; for they not only never returned themſelves, but flying ſome to the right, ſome to the left, and paſſing by the two wings of their own army, conſiſting of ſix thouſand men each; they ſeverally reported, that they were all that was left of the whole van of the army; and that the prediction would certainly be fulfilled, for that their companions had died by fire and ſmoke. This report ſtruck ſuch terror into each wing, that every one ſhifted for himſelf, and never appeared more.

THE main battle, conſiſting of about ten thouſand men, knowing nothing of what had happened to the wings, for Harlokin had ordered the wings to take a great compaſs round to incloſe us; hearing we were but a handfull advanced boldly; and as I had ordered my men not to mount too high; the enemy ſunk to their pitch. When they came nearer, I aſked Naſgig who led them, and if it was Harlokin. He told me no, his general, but that he was behind; and Naſgig begging me to let him try his ſkill with the general, I conſented, they not being yet come to the pitch of my cannon. Naſgig immediately took the graundee, and advancing ſingly with one of my cutlaſſes in his hand, challenged the general to ſingle combat. He like a man of honour accepting it, ordered a halt, and to it they went, each emulous of glory, and of taking all the advantage he could, ſo that they did not ſuddenly ſtrike or puſh; but ſometimes one, then the other was uppermoſt, and whirling expeditiouſly round, met almoſt breaſt to breaſt, when the general, who had not a pike, but a pikeſtaff headed with a great ſtone, gave Naſgig ſuch a ſtroke on his head, that he reeled and ſunk conſiderably; and I began to be in pain for him, the general lowering af-

ter him. But Naſgig ſpringing forward beneath him, and riſing light as air behind the general, had gained his height again before the general could turn about to diſcern him; and then plunging forward, and receiving a ſtroke a-croſs his left arm; at the ſame time he gave the general ſuch a blow near the out-ſide of the ſhoulder, as ſlit the graundee almoſt down to his hip, and took away part of the fleſh of the left arm; upon which the general fell fluttering down in vaſt pain very near me; but not before Naſgig, in his fall, at the ſame time deſcending, had taken another ſevere cut at him.

IMMEDIATELY upon this defeat, Naſgig again took his place behind me; our army ſhouting to the ſkies. But no ſooner had the general dropped, but on came Harlokin, with majeſty and terror mixed in his looks; and ſeeming to diſdain the air he rode on, waved his men to the attack with his hand. When he came near enough to hear me, I called him vile traitor, to oppoſe the army of his lawful ſovereign; telling him, if he would ſubmit, he ſhould be received to mercy. Baſe creeping inſect, ſays Harlokin, if thou has ought to ſay to me worth hearing, meet me in the air! this hand ſhall ſhew thee ſoon, who will moſt want mercy. And though I ſcorn to ſtoop to thee myſelf, this meſſenger ſhall ſatisfy the world that thou art an impoſtor, and ſend thee lifeleſs back to the fond king that ſent thee hither. With that, he hurled a javelin pointed with flint, ſharp as a needle, at me; but I avoided it. This then, ſays I, if words will not do, ſhall juſtify the truth of our prediction. And then levelling a muſket at him, I ſhot him through the very heart, that he fell dead within twenty paces of me; but perceiving another to take his room, notwithſtanding the confuſion my muſket had made amongſt them, I ran to my match, and giving

fire to two more pieces of ordnance at the ſame time, they fell ſo thick about me, that I had enough to do to eſcape being cruſhed to death by them, and the living remainder ſeparating, fled quite away, and put an end to the war. I waited in the field three days, to ſee if they would make head again; but they were ſo far from it, that before I could return, as I found afterwards, moſt of the revolted provinces had ſent their deputies, who themſelves carried the firſt news of the defeat, to beg to be received into mercy; all of whom were detained there, till my return with Harlokin's head.

At my return to Brandleguarp, I was met by the king, the Colambs, and almoſt the whole body of the people; every man, woman, and child, with two ſweecoe lights in their hands; which unuſual ſight in the air, gave me great alarm, till I inquired of Naſgig what it meant; who told me, it muſt certainly be a ſweecoan, or he knew not what it was. I aſking again what he meant by that; he told me it was a particular way of rejoicing he had heard of, but never ſeen; wherein, if the king goes in triumph, all the people of Brandleguarp, from ſixteen to ſixty, are obliged to attend him with ſweecoes. He ſaid it was reported amongſt them, that in Begſurbeck's time there were two of them, but there had been none ſince.

When we met them, I perceived they had opened into two lines or ranks of a prodigious length; at the further end of which, was the king, with innumerable lights about him; the whole looked like a prodigious avenue or viſto of lights, bounded at the further end, where the king was, with a pyramid of light. This had the moſt ſolemn and magnificent effect on the eye, that

any thing of light could poſſibly have; but as we paſſed through the ranks, each of the ſpectators having two lights, one was given to each ſoldier of the whole army. And then to look backward, as well as forward, the beauty of the ſcene was inexpreſſible. We marched all the way amidſt the ſhouts of people, and the ſound of the gripſacks, going very ſlowly between the ranks, and at length arriving at the pyramid, where the king was; I heard abundance of ſweet voices, chaunting my actions in triumphal ſongs. But I could take little notice of theſe, or of my ſon with his flagellet amongſt them, for the extravagant appearance of the pyramid, which ſeemed to reach the very ſky; for firſt, there was a long line of a full half mile, which hovered at even height with the two ſide ranks; in the centre of that, and over it, was the king ſingle; over him, another line, ſhorter than the firſt, and again over that, ſhorter and ſhorter lines; till at a prodigious height, it ended in one ſingle light. Theſe all hovering, kept their ſtations; while the king darted a little ſpace forward to meet me, and congratulate my ſucceſs; then turning, and preceding me, the whole pyramid turned, and marched before us; ſinging all the way to the city; the pyramid changing ſeveral times into divers forms, as into ſquares, half moons, with the horns ſometimes erect, and again reverſed, and various other figures; and yet amongſt this infinite number of globes, there was not the leaſt glaring or offenſive light; but only what was agreeable to the people themſelves. As the rear of the army entered the lines, they cloſed upon it, and followed us into Brandleguarp. While we paſſed the city to the palace, the whole body of people kept hovering, till the king and myſelf were alighted; and then every one alighted where he beſt could. All the ſtreets and avenues to the palace, were blocked up with

people, crowding to receive the king's beneficence; for he had proclaimed a feaſt, and open houſekeeping to the people for ſix days. The king, th ecolambs, ragams, and great officers of ſtate, with myſelf, had a magnificent entertainment prepared us in Begſurbeck's great room; and his majeſty after ſupper, being very impatient to know how the battle went, I told him, the only valourous exploit was performed by my friend Naſgig, who opened the way to victory, by the ſlaughter of Harlokin's general. Naſgig then roſe, deſiring only that ſo much might be attributed to him, as fortune had accidentally thrown into his ſcale; for it might have been equally his fate, as the general's, to have fallen; but except that ſkirmiſh, ſays he, and ſome flying cuts at the van, we have had no engagement at all; nor have we loſt a ſingle man; Peter only ſitting in his chair, and commanding victory: He ſpake aloud but thrice, and whiſpered once to them; but ſo powerfully, that having at the two firſt words laid above three hundred of the enemy at their lengths, and brought Harlokin to his feet with a whiſper; at the third word he concluded the war. The whole time from the firſt ſight of the enemy, to their total defeat, took not up more ſpace than one might fairly ſpend in traverſing his majeſty's garden. In ſhort, ſir, ſays Naſgig, your majeſty needs no other defence againſt public or private enemies as I can ſee, than Peter; and my profeſſion, whilſt he is with us, can be of little uſe to the ſtate.

After theſe compliments from Naſgig, and ſeparate ones from the king and the reſt; I told them it was the greateſt felicity to me, to be made an inſtrument by the great Collwarr, in freeing ſo mighty a kingdom, and conſiderable a people, from the miſery of a tyran-

nical power. You live, says I, so happily under the mild government of Georigetti, that it is shocking but to think into what a distressed state you must have fallen, under the power of an usurper; who claiming all as his own by way of conquest, would have reduced you to a miserable servitude. But, says I, there is, and I am sorry to see it, still a amongst you, an evil that you great ones feel not; and yet it cries for redress. Are we not all, from the king to the meanest wretch amongst us, formed with the same members? do we not all breath the same air? inhabit the same earth? are we not all subject to the same disorders, and do we not all feel pain and oppression alike? have we not all the same senses, the same faculties? and in short, are we not all equally creatures of, and servants to the same master, the great Collwarr? Would not the king have been a slave, but for the accident of being begotten by one who was a king? and would not the poorest creature amongst us have been the king, had he been so begotten? Did you great men, by any superior merit before your births, procure a title to the high stations in which you are placed? No, you did not. Therefore give me leave to tell you, what I would have done. As every man has equal right to the protection of Collwarr, why when you have no enemy to distress you, will you distress one another? Consider you great ones, and act upon this disinterested principle; do to another, what you in his place, would have him to do to you; dismiss your slaves, let all men be what Collwarr made them, free. But if this unequal distinction amongst you, of man and man, is still retained; though you are at present free from the late disaster, it shall be succeeded with more and heavier. And now, that you may know I would not have every man a lord, or every one a beggar; remember, I would

only have every ſerving man at liberty to chooſe his own maſter, and every maſter his own man: For he that hath property, and benefits to beſtow, will never want dependants, for the ſake of thoſe benefits, to ſerve him; as he that has them not, muſt ſerve for the ſake of obtaining them. But then let it be done with free will; he that then ſerves you will have an intereſt in it, and do it for his own ſake with a willing mind; and you who are ſerved, will be tenderer and kinder to a good ſervant, as knowing by a contrary uſage you ſhall loſe him. I deſire this may now be declared to be ſo, or your reaſons, if any there are, againſt it.

ONE of the ragams ſaid he thought I ſpoke what was very juſt, and what would be highly acceptable to Collwarr.

THEN two of the Colambs roſe to ſpeak together, and after a ſhort compliment who ſhould begin; they both declared they only roſe to teſtify their conſents.

THE king referring it to me, and the Colambs conſenting; I ordered freedom to be proclaimed through the city; ſo that every one appeared at their uſual duties, to ſerve their own maſters for a month; and then to be at liberty to come to freſh agreement with them, or who elſe they pleaſed.

THIS, ſir, ſays I, to the king, will now be a day of joy indeed, to thoſe poor hearts who would have been in no fear of loſing before, let who would have reigned; for can any man believe a ſlave cares who is uppermoſt; he is but a ſlave ſtill. But now, ſays I, thoſe who were ſo before may by induſtry gain property;

and then their own intereſt engages them to defend the ſtate.

THERE is but one thing more I will trouble you with now; and that, ſays I, to the ragams, is, that we all meet at the mouch to-morrow, to render Collwarr thanks for the late, and implore future favour. And this paſſed without any contradiction.

WHEN we met the ragams were at a great loſs for want of their image, not knowing what to do or ſay. For their practice had been, to proſtrate themſelves on the ground, making ſeveral odd geſtures; but whether they prayed, or only ſeemed ſo to do, no one knew.

WHILE the people were gathering, I called to a ragam, ſeeing him out of character; ſuppoſe, ſaid I, for I ſee you want your image, you and your brethern had received a favour of the king, and you was deputed by them to thank him, you would ſcarce be at a loſs to expreſs your gratitude to him, and tell him how highly you all eſteemed his benefits, hoping you ſhould retain a juſt ſenſe of them, and behave yourſelves as dutiful ſubjects for the future; and then deſire him to keep you ſtill in his protection. And this, ſays I, as you believe in ſuch a being as Collwarr, who underſtands what you ſay, you may with equal courage do to him; keeping but your mind intent upon him, as if you ſaw him preſent. Indeed, ſays he, I believe you are right, we may ſo; but it is a new thing, and you muſt excuſe us, if we do it not ſo well at firſt.

I FOUND I had a very apt ſcholar, for after he had begun he made a moſt extraordinary prayer in regular

order; the people ſtanding very attentive. It was not long, but he juſtly obſerved the points I hinted to him.

When he had done, another and another went on, till we had heard ten of them, and in every one ſomething new, and very *a propos*; and ſeveral of them afterwards confeſſed, they never had the like ſatisfaction in their lives; for they had new hearts, and new thoughts, they ſaid.

We ſpent the ſix day feaſt in every gayety imaginable, and eſpecially in dancing, of which they were very fond in their way; but it was not ſo agreeable to me, as my own country way, there being too much antic in it. New deputies daily arrived from the revolted towns; and ſeveral little republics, not claimed by Georigetti before, begged to be taken under his protection; ſo that in one week, the king ſaw himſelf not only releaſed from the dread of being driven from his throne, but courted by ſome, ſubmitted to by others, and almoſt at the ſummit of glory which a ſovereign can attain to.

CHAP. XV.

A viſitation of the revolted provinces propoſed by Peter; his new name of the country received; religion ſettled in the weſt; ſlavery aboliſhed there; Laſmeel returns with Peter; Peter teaches him letters; the king ſurprized at written correſpondence; Peter deſcribes the make of a beaſt to the king.

THE feſtival being over, the Colambs begged leave to depart; but the king, who now did nothing without me, conſulted with me, if it was yet proper. I told him, as things had ſo long been in confuſion in the weſt, that though the provinces had made their ſubmiſſion, yet the neceſſity of their circumſtances, and the terror, might have cauſed them only to diſſemble, till their affairs were compoſed again; and that as it was more than probable, ſome relations of the deceaſed Harlokin, or other popular perſon, might engage them again in another revolt; I thought it would not be improper to adviſe with his Colambs about the eſtabliſhment of the preſent tranquillity, and not by too great a ſecurity give way to future commotions; and as all the Colambs were then preſent, it might be proper to ſummons them once more.

WHEN they were met, the king declared the more particular ſatisfaction he took in that meeting, than he had heretofore done, when they had been put to it for means to ſecure their lives and properties; for now, ſays he, our deliberations muſt turn upon ſecuring our new acquiſitions, and on ſettling thoſe provinces, which

till now have never fallen under my power. But, says he, I shall refer it to Peter to propose to you what at present seems most necessary for you to consider of; and that adjusted, shall dismiss you.

I TOLD them, that as the too-sudden healing up of wounds in the body natural, before the bottom was clean and uncorrupt, made them liable to break out again with greater malignity; so wounds in the body political, if skinned over only, without probing and cleansing the source and spring from whence they arose, would rankle and fret within, till a proper opportunity; and then burst forth again with redoubled violence. I would therefore propose a visitation of the several provinces; an inquiry into their conduct; an examination into the lives and principles of the Colambs, the inferior officers, and magistrates; and either to retain the old, or appoint new, as there should be occasion. This visitation I would have performed by his majesty, and so many of you the honourable Colambs, says I, as he shall see fit should attend him in royal state; that his new subjects may see his majesty, and hear his most gracious words; and being sensible of his good disposition towards them, may be won by his equity and justice, to a zealous submission to his government; which nothing but the perception of their own senses can establish in the heart. This I do not doubt, will answer the end I propose, and consolidate the peace and happiness of Norm, Normus, I must say Doorpt Swangeanti.

HEARING me hesitate at the word Normbdgrsuti, and call it Doorpt Swangeanti, the whole assembly rang with Doorpt Swangeanti; and at last came to a resolution, that the west being now united again to the

east, the whole dominions should be called Sas Doorpt: Swangeanti, or the great flight-land.

THEY approved the visitation, and all offered to go with the king; but insisted I should be of the party: Which agreeing to do, I chose me out two of the most knowing ragams, to teach the new religion amongst them; for in every project I had my view to advance religion.

SOME were for having the deputies released, and dispatched with notice of the king's intentions; but I objecting, that they might disrelish their confinement, and possibly raise reports prejudicial to our proceedings, it was thought better to take them with us, and go ourselves as soon as possible.

WE set out with a prodigious retinue, first to the right, in order to sweep round the whole country, and take all the towns in our way, and occasionally enter the middle parts as the towns lay commodious.

WE were met by the magistrates and chief officers of each district; at some distance from each city, with strings about their necks, and the crashoe instrument borne before them in much humility. His majesty said but little to them on the way; but ordered them to precede him to the city, and conduct him to the Colamb's house; when he was commanded to surrender his employment to his majesty; as did all the other officers who held posts under him. Then an examination was taken of their lives, characters, and behaviour in their stations; and finding most of them had behaved well, to the government they had lived under, (for their plea was, they had found things under an usurpation, and being

ſo, that government was natural to them, having ſingly no power to alter it;) upon their perfect ſubmiſſion to the king, and ſolemn engagements to advance and maintain his right, they received their commiſſions anew from his majeſty's own mouth. But where any one had been cruel or oppreſſive to the ſubjects, or committed any notorious crime or breach of truſt, for the meaneſt perſons had liberty to complain, he was rejected, and for the moſt part ſent to Craſhdoorpt, to prevent the ill effects of his diſgrace.

We having diſplaced but five Colambs, and a few inferior officers; the moderation and juſtice of our proceedings gave the utmoſt ſatisfaction both to the magiſtrates and people.

Having obſerved at Brandleguarp abundance of the ſmall images my wife had ſpoken of, and thinking this a proper opportunity to ſhew my reſentment againſt them; I ordered ſeveral of the ragams of the weſt before me, and aſked what ſmall images they had amongſt them. One, who ſpoke for the reſt, told me, very few he believed; for he had ſcarce had any brought to him to be bleſſed. Where, ſays I, is your great image? he told me at Youk. And have not the people here many ſmall ones? very few, ſays he, for they have not been forced upon us long. How forced upon you, ſays I, do not the people worſhip them? A ſmall number now do, ſays he. Pray ſpeak out, ſays I, when might you not worſhip them? Never, that I know of, ſays he, in our ſtate, till about ten years ago, when Harlokin obliged us to it. What, did you not worſhip them before, ſays I? No, ſays he, never ſince it has been a ſeparate kingdom; for we would follow the old ragam's advice of worſhipping Collwarr; which they not admit-

ting of, the ſtate was divided between us who would, and they who would not come into the ragam's doctrine; and though Harlokin was a zealous image-worſhipper, yet all he could do would not bring the people heartily into it; for Collwarr never wanted a great majority. This pleaſed me prodigiouſly, being what was never hinted to me before; and I reſolved not to let my ſcheme be a loſer by it.

As we were to viſit Youk in about eight days, I ſummoned the ragams and people to meet at the mouch: There recounting the great things done by Collwarr in all nations; this I could make appear, ſays I, by many examples; but as you have one even at your own towns, I need go no farther.

I MUST begin in ancient times, when I preſume you all worſhipped an idol; have you any tradition before this? They ſaid, no. This image, ſays I, was worſhiped in Begſurbeck's days, when an old ragam, whoſe mind Collwarr had enlightned with the truth, would have withdrawn your reverence from the image, to the original Collwarr himſelf; you would not conſent; he threatens you, but promiſes ſucceſs to Begſurbeck, who did conſent; and he had it to an old age. Then thoſe who would alſo conſent; were ſo far encouraged, as to be able to form an independant kingdom. Could no body yet ſee the cauſe? Was it not apparent Collwarr was angry with the eaſt, that would not follow the old ragam, and cheriſhed the weſt who would? But to be ſhort, let us apply the preſent inſtance, and ſure it will convince us, who is right who wrong.

So long as the weſt followed Collwarr, they flouriſhed, and the eaſt declined; but no ſooner had the weſt

degenerated under the command of Harlokin, and the eaſt by my means had embraced Collwarr, but the tables were turned; the eaſt is found weighty, and the weſt kicks the beam. Theſe things whoever ſees not, is blind indeed. Therefore let publication be made, for the deſtruction of all ſmall images; and let the harbourers of them, contrary to this order, be ſlit; and for myſelf, I will deſtroy this mother monſter; take you, holy ragams, care to deſtroy the brood; and having ſaid this, I hacked the new idol to pieces.

I ORDERED proclamation for aboliſhing ſlavery, under the reſtrictions uſed at Brandleguarp; and thus having compoſed the weſt, and given a general ſatisfaction, we returned; almoſt the whole weſt accompanying us, till the eaſt received us; and never was ſo happy a union, or more preſent to teſtify it, ſince the creation I believe.

I ORDERED ſeveral of the principle mens ſons to court, in order for employment, and to furniſh out future Colambs; and this I did, as knowing each country will rather approve of a member of their own body for their head, than a ſtranger; and in my opinion, it is the moſt natural union. And then breeding them under the eye of the king eight or ten years, or more, they are as it were naturalized to him too, and in better capacity to ſerve both king and country.

As my head was conſtantly at work for the good of this people, I turned the moſt trifling incidents into ſome uſe or other; and made the narroweſt proſpects extend to the vaſteſt diſtances. I ſhall here inſtance in one only. There was at Youk a private man's ſon, who by mere accident I happened to aſk ſome ſlight

queſtion; and he giving me, with a profound reſpect and graceful aſſurance, a moſt pertinent anſwer; that, and the manner of its delivery, gave me a pleaſure, which upon further diſcourſe with him, was, contrary to cuſtom, very much increaſed; for I found in him an extenſive genius, and a deſire for my converſation. I deſired his father to put him under my care, which the old man, as I was then in ſo great repute, readily agreed to; and his ſon deſiring nothing more, I took him with me to Brandleguarp. I ſoon procured him a pretty poſt of but ſmall duty, for I had purpoſed other employment for him, but of ſufficient ſignificancy to procure him reſpect. I took great delight in talking with him on different ſubjects, and obſerved by his queſtions upon them, which often puzzled me, or his anſwers to them, that he had a moſt pregnant fancy and ſurprizing ſolidity, joined to a continual and unweary'd application. I frequently mentioning books, writing, and letters to him, and telling him what great things might be attained that way; his inquiſitive temper, and the ſchemes he had formed thereon, put me upon a way of thinking of ſeveral things I ſhould never have hit upon without him. I conſidered all the ways I could contrive, to teach him letters; and letting him into my deſign, he aſked me how I did to make a letter. I deſcribed a pen to him, and told him I put a black liquor into it, and as I drew that along upon a flat white thing we made uſe of, called paper, it would make marks which way ever I drew it, into what ſhape I pleaſed. Why then, ſays he, any thing that will make a mark upon another thing as I pleaſe, will do. True, ſays I, but what will we get that will make a black mark? We were entering further into this debate; but the king ſending for me, I left him unſatis-

fied. I ſtayed late with the king that night, ſo did not ſee Laſmeel, for that was his name, till next night, wondering what was become of him. I aſked him then, where he had been all the day? He told me he had been looking for a pen and paper. I laughed, and aſked him if he had found them? yes ſays he, or ſomething that will do as well: So he opened one ſide of his graundee, and ſhewed me a large flat leaf, ſmooth and pulpy, very long and wide, and about a quarter of an inch thick, almoſt like an indian fig leaf. And what am I to do with this, ſays I? To mark it, ſays he, and ſee where you mark. With what, ſays I? with this, ſays he, putting his hand again into his graundee, and taking out three or four ſtrong, ſharp prickles. I looked at them both, and clapping him on the head, Laſmeel, ſays I, if you and I were in England, you ſhould be made a privy counſellor. What, will it not do then, ſays he? I told him we would try. I thought, ſays he, it would have done very well; for I marked one all about, and though I could not ſee much at firſt, by that time I had made an end, that I did firſt, was quite of a different colour from the leaf, and I could ſee it as plain as could be. I told him, as he was of an age to comprehend what I meant, I would take another method with him than with a child; ſo I reaſoned from ſentences, backwards to words, and from them to ſyllables, and ſo to letters. I then made one, the vowel A, told him its ſound, and added a conſonant to it, and told him, that part of the ſound of each diſtinct letter put together, as the two letters themſelves were, made another ſound, which I called a ſyllable; and that joining two or more of them together made a word, by putting the ſame letters together as made the ſounds of thoſe ſyllables which made that word Then ſetting him a copy of

letters, which with very little difficulty were to be drawn upon the leaf, and telling him their ſounds; I left him to himſelf; and when he had done, though I named them but twice over, his memory was ſo ſtrong as to retain the ſounds, as he called them, of every one but F, L, and Q.

In two months time, I made him maſter of any thing I wrote to him; and, as he delighted in it, he wrote a great deal himſelf; ſo that we kept an epiſtolary correſpondence, and he would ſet down all the common occurrences of the day, as what he heard and ſaw, with his remarks on divers things.

One day, as the king and I were walking in the gardens, and talking of the cuſtoms of my country, and about our wars, telling him, how our ſoldiers fought on horſe back; the king could not conceive what I meant by an horſe. I told him, my wife had ſaid there were neither beaſts or fiſhes in her country; which I was very much ſurprized at, conſidering how we abounded with both; and therefore ſays I, to tell your majeſty, that a horſe is a creature with four legs; you muſt naturally believe it to be ſomewhat like a man with four legs. Why truly ſays he, I believe it is; but has it the graundee? I could not forbear ſmiling, even at majeſty; and wanted to find ſome ſimilitude to compare it to, to carry the king's mind that way; for elſe he would ſooner, I thought, conceive it like a tree or a mountain, than what it really was; and as I was muſing, it came into my head, I had given Laſmeel a ſmall print of an horſe, which I found in one of the captain's pockets at Grandevolet, and believing it to be the ſtamp of a tobacco-paper, had kept it to pleaſe the children with;

ſo I told the king, I believed I could ſhew him the figure of a horſe. He told me it would much oblige him.

SEEING ſeveral of the guards waiting at the garden-arch; I looked, and at laſt found one of Laſmeel's leaves in the garden; and cutting one of them up with my knife, I took the point of that, and wrote to Laſmeel, to ſend me by the bearer the picture of a horſe I gave him, that I might ſhew it to the king. And calling one of the guards, carry that to Laſmeel, ſays I, he is, I believe, in my apartment, and bring me an anſwer directly. Then falling into diſcourſe again with the king; and preſently turning at the end of the walk, I ſaw the ſame guard again. Says I, you cannot have brought me an anſwer already. You have not told me, ſays he, what to bring you an anſwer to. Nor ſhall I, ſays I; do as you are bid; for I perceived then what the fellow ſtuck at. He walked off with the leaf, but very diſcontentedly. The king ſaid, he wondered how I could act ſuch a contradiction. This, father, ſays he, is not what I expected from you; to order a man to bring an anſwer, without giving him a meſſage. I deſired his patience only till the man came back. Preſently, ſays the king, here he comes. Well, ſays he, what anſwer? Sir, ſays the fellow, I have only had the walk for my pains; for he ſent it back again, and a little white thing with it. Ha, ha, ſays the king, I thought ſo; come father, own you have once been in the wrong; for I am ſure you intended to give him a meſſage, but having forgot it, would not ſubmit to be told of your miſtake by a guard. I looked very grave, reading what Laſmeel had wrote; which was to tell me he had obeyed my orders, by ſending the horſe; for he was juſt then drawing it upon a leaf.

COME, come, says the king, give the man his message, father, and let him go again. Sir, says I, there is no need of that; he has punctually obeyed me, and Lasmeel was then at the table in my oval chamber with a leaf, and this picture, in my hand, before him.

THE king was ready to sink when I said so, and shewed the print. Truly father, says he, I have been to blame to question you; for though these things are above my comprehension, I am not to think any thing beyond your skill. I made no reply to it, but shewing the king the picture, the guard sneaked off, and glad he was, I believe, he could do so.

I WENT then upon the explanation of my horse, and answering fifty questions about him; at last, he asked what his inside was; exactly the same as your majesty's, said I. And can he eat and breathe too, says he? just as you can, says I. Well, says he, I should never have believed there had been such a creature; what would I give for one of them. I set forth the divers other uses we put them to, besides the wars; and by the picture, with some supposed alterations, I described a cow, a sheep, and numberless other quadrupedes; my account of which gave him great pleasure.

CHAP. XVI.

Peter ſends for his family; a riſing of former ſlaves on that account; takes a view of the city; deſcription of it, and of the country; hot and cold ſprings.

HAVING now ſome leiſure time on my hands to conſider over my own affairs? I had thoughts of tranſporting my family with all my effects to Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti; but yet had no mind to relinquiſh all thoughts of my ſhip and cargo; for the greateſt part of this was ſtill remaining, I having but had the pickings through the gulph. I had once a mind to have gone myſelf, but conſidering the immenſe diſtance over ſea though I had once come ſafe, I thought I ought not to, tempt providence, where my preſence was not abſolutely neceſſary.

NASGIG, to whoſe care and conduct any enterpriſe might be truſted, offered his ſervice to go and execute any commands I ſhould give him. His only difficulty, he ſaid, was, that it would be impoſſible for him to remember the different names of many things which he had no idea of, to convey the knowledge of them to his mind when he ſaw them; but barring that he doubted not but to give me ſatisfaction. I told him I would ſend an aſſiſtant with him, who could remember whatever I once told him, and that I might not burden his memory with names only, Laſmeel ſhould carry his memory with him, and that he (Naſgig) ſhould only have the executive part.

LASMEEL who had ſat waiting an opportunity to put in for a ſhare of the adventure, having a longing deſire to ſee the ſhip told Naſgig, he had a peculiar art of memory, ſo as to remember whatever he would as long as he pleaſed, and that if he carried that with him, they need fear no miſtakes.

THE king having granted me as many of his guards as I pleaſed for the carriage of my things, we appointed them to be ready on the fourth day, when Naſgig and Laſmeel ſet out with them.

I ORDERED Laſmeel however to be with me the next morning, that we might ſet down proper inſtructions; which I told him would be very long, and that he muſt bring a good number of leaves with him.

WHEN Laſmeel entered my chamber next morning, he informed me that the whole city was in an uproar, eſpecially thoſe who had been freed by me. What! ſays I, have they ſo ſoon forgot their ſubjection, to miſapply their liberty already? But ſtep and bring me word what is the matter, and order ſome of the ringleaders hither to me.

LASMEEL upon inquiry found that it had been given out I was going to leave the country, and they all ſaid wherever I went they were determined to go and ſettle with me; for if I left them they ſhould be reduced to ſlavery again. However, he brought ſome of them to me, and upon my telling them I thanked them for their affection to me, but blamed them for ſhewing it in ſo tumultuous a manner, and that I was ſo far from intending to leave them, that I was ſending for my family and effects, in order to ſettle amongſt them; they

rejoiced very much, and told me they would carry the good news to their companions and diſperſe immediately; but I was now in more perplexity than before, for they having ſignified my deſigns to the reſt, they ruſhed into the gallery in ſuch numbers, that they forced up to my very chamber. I told them this was an unprecedented manner of uſing a perſon they pretended a kindneſs for, and told them, if they made uſe of ſuch riſings to expreſs their gratitude to me, it would be the direct means to oblige me to leave them; for, ſays I, do you think I can be ſafe in a kingdom, where greater deference is paid to me than to the crown? They begged my pardon they ſaid, and would obey me in any thing; but their preſent trouble was only to offer their ſervices to fetch my family and goods, or do any thing elſe I ſhould want them for, and if I would favour them in that, they would retire directly. I told them when I had conſidered of it they ſhould hear from me, and this again quieted them.

THIS diſturbance not only took up much of my time, which I could have better employed, but put me to a nonplus how to come off with them, till I ſent Maleck to tell them, though I ſet a great value upon their eſteem, yet after what had paſſed, it would be the moſt unadviſeable thing in nature for me to accept their kindneſs; for having before requeſted a body of men of the king, as he had graciouſly granted them, it would be preferring them to the king ſhould I now relinquiſh his grant and make uſe of their offer, and after this I heard no more of it.

I HAD ſcarce met with a more difficult taſk than to fix exact rules for the conduct of my preſent undertaking, there being ſo many things to be expreſſed,

wherein the leaſt perplexity ariſing, might have cauſed both delay and damage; for I was not only forced to ſet down the things I would have brought, but the manner and method of packing and ſecuring them; but as Laſmeel could read my writing to Pedro at home, and Youwarkee on board, it would be a means though far from an expeditious one, of bringing matters into ſome order: And after I had done, as I thought, I could have enumerated many more things, and was obliged to add an *et cetera* to the end of my catalogue; and while they were ready for flight, I added divers others particulars and circumſtances. Nay, when they were even upon the graundee, I recollected the moſt material thing of all; for my greateſt concern was, having broke up ſo many of my cheſts, to find package for the things; I ſay, even ſo late as that, I bethought me of the ſeveral great water-caſks I had on board, that would hold an infinite number of ſmall things, and would be ſtung eaſily; ſo I ſtopped them and ſet down that, and they were no ſooner out of ſight and hearing, but I remembering twenty more, I was then forced to truſt them to my *et cetera*.

I HAD ſent my own flying chair to bring the boys who had not the graundee, with orders for Pedro to ſit tied in the chair, with Dicky tied in his arms, Jemmy to ſit tied to the board before the chair, and David behind; ſo I hoped they would come ſafe enough, and then my wife and Sary were able to help themſelves.

HAVING diſpatched my caravan, and being all alone, I called Quilly the next morning, and telling him, I had thoughts of viewing the country, I bad him prepare to go with me.

I HAD now been here above six months, and yet upon coming to walk gravely about the city, I found myself as much a stranger to the knowledge of the place as if that had been the first day of my arrival, though I had been over it several times in my chair.

THIS city is not only one of, but actually the most curious piece of work in the world, and consists of one immense entire stone of a considerable height, and it may be seven miles in length, and near as broad as it is long. The streets and habitable part of it, are scooped as it were out of the solid stone, to the level with the rest of the country, very flat and smooth at the bottom, the rock rising perpendicular from the streets on each side. The figure of the city is a direct square, each side about six miles long, with a large open circle in the centre of the square, about a mile in diameter, and from each of the sides of the outer streets to the opposite side, runs another street, cutting the centre of the circle.

ALONG the whole face of the rock, bounding the streets and the circle, there are arch-ways; those in the circle and the four cross streets for the gentry and better people, and those in the outer streets for the meaner; and it is as easy to know, as by a sign, where a great man lives by the grandeur of his entrance, and lavish distribution of the pillars, carving, and statues of his portico within and without; for as they have no doors, you may look in, and are not forbid entrance; and though it should look odd to an English reader, that an Englishman should speak with pleasure of a land of darkness, as that almost was; yet I am satisfied, whoever shall see it after me will be persuaded, that for the real grandeur of their entrances, and for the magnifi-

cence of the apartments and ſculpture, no part of the univerſe can produce the like; and though within doors there is no other manner of light than the ſweecoes, yet that, when you are once uſed to it, is ſo agreeable and free from all noiſome ſavour, that I never once regretted the loſs of the ſun within doors, though I often have when abroad, but then that would be injurious to the proper inhabitants, though they can no more ſee in total darkneſs than myſelf.

I HAVE been over ſome of theſe private houſes, which contain it may be thirty rooms great and ſmall, ſome higher, ſome lower, full of ſweecoe-lights, and extremely well proportioned and beautiful.

THE king's palace, with all the apartments, ſtands in and takes up one full fourth part of the ſquare of the whole city, and is indeed of itſelf a perfect city.

THERE is no great man's houſe without one or more long galleries for the ladies to divert themſelves at divers ſports in, particularly at one like our bowls on a bowling green, and ſomewhat like nine holes, at which they play for wines, and drink a great deal, for none of them will intoxicate.

IN my walk and ſurvey of the city, one of the Colambs being making a houſe to reſide in when at Brandleguarp, I had the curioſity to go in. I ſaw there abundance of botts ſtand filled with a greeniſh liquor, and aſked Quilly what that was, he ſaid it was what the ſtonemen uſed in making the houſes. I proceeded further in, where I ſaw ſeveral men at work, and ſtayed a good while to obſerve them. Each man had a bott of this liquor in his left hand, and ſtood before a

large bank of ſtone it may be thirty feet high, reaching forward up to the ceiling of the place, and aſcending by ſteps from bottom to top, the workmen ſtanding ſome on one ſtep ſome on another, pouring on this liquor with their left hands, and with their right holding a wooden tool, ſhaped like a little ſpadle; I obſerved wherever they poured on this water, a ſmoak aroſe for a little ſpace of time, and then the place turned white, which was ſcraped off like fine powder with the ſpadle hand, and then pouring new liquor, he ſcraped again, working all the while by ſweetoe lights.

HAVING my watch in my pocket I meaſured a ſpot of a yard long, about a foot high, and a foot and a half on the upper flat, to ſee how long he would be fetching down that piece, and he got it away in a little above two hours; by this means I came to know how they made their houſes, for I had neither ſeen any tool I thought proper, or even iron itſelf, except my own, ſince I came into the country. Upon inquiry, I found that the ſcrapings of this ſtone, and a portion of common earth, mixed with a water they have, will cement like plaſter; and they uſe it in the ſmall ornamental work of their buildings. I then went further into this houſe, where I ſaw one making the figure of a glumm by the ſame method; but it ſtanding upright in the ſolid rock againſt the wall, the workman held his liquor in an open ſhell, and dipping ſuch ſtuff as my bed was made of, bound up in ſhort rolls, ſome larger ſome leſs, into the liquor, he touched the figure, he then ſcraped till he had reduced it into a perfect piece.

IT is impoſſible to imagine how this work rids away; for in ten months time after I ſaw it, this houſe was

compleated, having a great number of fine, large, and lofty rooms in it exquiſitely carved to all appearance.

MY wonder ceaſed as to the palace, when I ſaw how eaſily this work was done; but ſure there is no other ſuch room in the world as Begſurbeck's that I deſcribed before.

THE palace, as I ſaid before, taking up one quarter of the city, opens into four ſtreets by four different arches; and before one of the ſides which I call the front is a large triangle, formed by the entrance out of one of the croſs ſtreets, and the two ends of the front of the palace. Along the lower front of it, all the way runs a piazza of conſiderable height, ſupported by vaſt round columns, which ſeemed to bear up the whole front of the rock; over which was a gallery of equal length with balluſtrades along it, ſupported with pillars of a yet finer make, and over that a pediment with divers figures, and other work to the top of the rock; which being there quite even for its whole length, was incloſed with balluſtrades between pedeſtals all the way, on which ſtood the ſtatues of their ancient kings, ſo large as to appear equal to the life. The other two ſides of the triangle were dwellings for divers officers belonging to the palace. Under the middle arch of the piazza, was the way into the palace, through a long, ſpacious, arched paſſage, whoſe further end opened into a large ſquare; on each ſide of this paſſage were large ſtair-caſes, if I may ſo call them, by which you aſcend gradually, and without ſteps, into the upper apartments.

THE next morning we took another walk, for I told Quilly, I had a mind to take a proſpect of the country; we then went out at the back arch of the palace, as-

we had the day before at one of the ſides, there being a like paſſage through the rock, from that we went out at to an oppoſite arch leading into the garden. I ſay, we went out at the back arch, and after paſſing a large quadrangle with lodgings all round it, we aſcended through a cut in the rock to a large flat, where we plainly ſaw the black mountain with its top in the very ſky, the ſides of which afforded numberleſs trees, though the ground within view afforded very little verdure, or even ſhrubs. But the moſt beautiful ſight from the rock was, to ſee the people come home loaded from the mountain, and from the woods, with, it may be forty pound weight each on their backs, and mounting over the rock, to ſee them dart along the ſtreets to their ſeveral dwellings, over the heads of thouſands of others walking in all parts of the ſtreets, whilſt others were flying other ways. It was very pleaſant to ſee a man walking gravely in one ſtreet, and as quick as thought to ſee him over the rock ſettle in another perhaps two miles diſtant.

THE near view of the country ſeeming ſo barren, naturally led me to aſk Quilly, from whence they got proviſion for ſo many people as the city contained, which, to be ſure could not be leſs than three hundred thouſand. He told me they had nothing but what came from the great foreſt, or the ſkirts of the mountain. But for the grain of it, and ſome few outward marks, ſays I, I could have ſworn I had eaten ſome of my country beef the other day at the king's table. I do not know what your beef, as you call it, is, but I am ſure we have nothing here, ſays he, but the fruit of ſome tree or ſhrub that ever I heard of. I wonder, ſays I, Quilly, how your cooks dreſs their victuals. I have eaten many things boiled, and otherwiſe dreſt

hot; but have ſeen no rivers or water ſince I came into this country, except for drinking or waſhing my hands, and I do not know where that comes from. And another thing, ſays I, ſurprizes me, though I ſee no ſun as we have to warm the air, you are very temperate in the town, and it is ſeldom cold here; but I neither ſee fire or ſmoak. We have, ſays Quilly, ſeveral very good ſprings under the palace, both of hot water and cold, and I do not know what we ſhould do with fires, we ſee the dread of them ſufficiently at mount Alkoe. Our cooks dreſs their fruits at the hot ſprings. That is a fancy, ſays I, they cannot boil them there. I am ſure we have no other dreſſing, ſays he. Well, Quilly, ſays I, we will go home now the way you told me of, and to-morrow you ſhall ſhew me the ſprings; but pray, how come you to be ſo much afraid of mount Alkoe? I ſuppoſe your eyes will not bear the light, is not that all? No, no, ſays Quilly, that is the country of bad men; ſome of us have flown over there accidentally, when the mountain has been cool, as it is ſometimes for a good while together, and have heard ſuch noiſes as would frighten any honeſt man out of his ſenſes; for there they beat and puniſh bad men. I could not make much of his ſtory, nor did I inquire further; for I had before determined if poſſible to get over thither. As we were now come into the garden, I ordered Quilly to get ready my dinner, and I would come in preſently.

WE went next morning to view the ſprings, and indeed it was a ſight well worth conſidering; we were in divers offices under the rock, (Quilly carrying two globe-lights before me) in which were ſprings of very clear water, ſome of hot, and ſome of cold, riſing within two or three inches of the ſurface of the floor. We then went into the kitchen, which was bigger than I ever

ſaw one of our churches; and where were a great number of thoſe ſprings, the hot all boiling full ſpeed day and night, and ſmoaking like a caldron, the water riſing through very ſmall chinks in the ſtone, into baſons, ſome bigger, ſome leſs; and they had ſeveral deep ſtone jars to ſet any thing to boil in. But what was the moſt ſurprizing, you ſhould ſee a ſpring of very cold water, within a few feet of one of hot, and they never riſe higher, or ſink lower than where they are. I talked with the maſter cook, an ingenious man about them; and he told me, they lie in this manner all over the rocky part of the country; and that the firſt thing any one does in looking our for a houſe is to ſee for the water, whether both hot and cold may be found within the compaſs he deſigns to make uſe of, and finding that, he goes on, or elſe ſearches another place. And he told me, where this convenience was not in great plenty, the people did not inhabit; which made the towns all ſo very populous. He ſaid too, that thoſe warm ſprings made the air more wholeſome about the towns, than in other parts where there were none of them. I thanked him for his information, which finiſhed my ſearch for that time.

CHAP. XVII.

Peter ſends for his family; Pendlehamby gives a fabulous account of the peopling of that country; their policy and government; Peter's diſcourſe on trade; Youwarkee arrives; invites the king and nobles to a treat; ſends to Graundevolet for fowls.

THE days hanging heavy on my hands till the arrival of my family; I ſent Pendlehamby word, that as I had ſent for my family and effects in order to ſettle in this country, and expected them very ſoon, I ſhould be glad of his, my brother and ſiſter's company, to welcome them on their arrival.

MY father came alone, which gave me an opportunity of informing myſelf in the riſe and policy of the ſtate; as I purpoſed to take ſeveral further ſteps in their affairs, if they might prove agreeable and conſiſtent; For hitherto having had only ſlight ſketches or hints of things, I could form no juſt idea of the whole of their laws cuſtoms, and government. Explaining myſelf therefore to him, I begged his inſtruction in thoſe particulars.

SON Peter, ſays my father, you have already done too much in a ſhort time; to leave any room to think you can do no more; and as you have hitherto directed your own proceedings with ſuch incredible ſucceſs, neither the king or colambs will interpoſe againſt your inclination, but give you all the advice in our powers;

and I ſhall eſteem your ſelecting me for that purpoſe, no ſmall honour.

KNOW then, that this ſtate, by the tradition of our ragams, has ſubſiſted eleven thouſand years; for before that time, the great mountain Emina, then not far from the black mountain, but now fallen and ſunk in the ſea, roaring and raging in its own bowels for many ages; at laſt burſt aſunder with great violence, and threw up numberleſs unformed fleſhy maſſes to the very ſtars; two of which, happening in their paſſage to touch the ſide of the black mountain, for all the reſt fell into the ſea and were loſt, lodged there, and lying cloſe together as they grew, united to each other, till they were joined in one; and in proceſs of time, by the dews of heaven, became a glumm and a gawrey; but being ſo linked together by the adheſion of their fleſh, they were obliged both to move which way either would; living thus a long time in great love and fondneſs for each other, they had but one inclination, leſt both ſhould be ſufferers upon the leaſt diſagreement.

IN proceſs of time, they grew tired of each others conſtant ſociety, and one willing to go here, and the other there, bred perpetual diſorders between them; for prevention whereof for the future, they agreed to cut themſelves aſunder with ſharp ſtones. The pain indeed was intolerable during the operation, but however they effected it; and the wounds each received were very dangerous, and a long time before they were perfectly healed; but at length, ſometimes agreeing, ſometimes not, they begat a ſon, whom they called Perigenæ, and a daughter they called Philella. Theſe two as they grew up, deſpiſing their parents who lived

on the top of the mountain, ventured to descend into the plains, and living upon the fruits they found there, sheltered themselves in this very rock. Mean time the old glumm and gawrey, having lived to a great age, were so infirm, that neither of them was able to walk for a long time; till one day, being near each other, and trying to rise by the assistance of each other, they both got up, and leaning upon, and supporting each other, they also walked commodiously; this mutual assistance kept them in good humour a great while, till one day, passing along near hoxnilo, they both fell in.

PERIGENE and Philella had several children in the plains, who as they grew up, increasing, spread into remote parts and peopled the country; at last one of them, being a very passionate man, at the instigation of his wife, became the first murtherer, by slaying his father. This so enraged the people, that the murtherer and his wife, in abhorrence of the fact, were conveyed to mount Alkoe, where was then only a very narrow deep pit, into which they were both thrown head-long; but the persons who carried them thither, had scarce retired from the mouth of the pit, when it burst out with fire, raging prodigiously, and has kept burning ever since. Arco and Telamne, the murtherer and his wife, lived seven thousand years in the flames; till having with their teeth wrought a passage through the side of the mountain, they begat a new generation about the foot of the mountain, and having brought fire with them, resolved to keep it burning ever after in memory of their escape: and power being given them over bad men, they and their progeny are now wholly employed in beating and tormenting them

A GREAT while after Arco and Telamine were thus diſpoſed of, the people of this country multiplying, it happened one year, that all the fruits were ſo dry, that the people not able to live any longer upon the moiſture of them only, as they had always done before, and fearing all to be conſumed with drought, one of their ragains praying very much, and promiſing to make an image to Collwarr, and preſerve it for ever, if he would ſend them but moiſture; in one night's time, the earth caſt up ſuch a flood, that they were forced to mount on the rocks for fear of drowning. But the next day it all ſunk away again, except ſeveral little bubbles which remained in many places for a long time, and the people lived only on the moiſture they ſucked from the ſtone where thoſe bubbles ſettled, for many years; for they found that the water aroſe to the height of the ſurface, and no higher; and where they found moſt of thoſe chinks and bubbles, they ſettled and formed cities; living altogether in holes of the rock; till one Lallio, having found out the art of crumbling the rock to duſt by a liquor he got from the trees, and working himſelf a noble houſe in the rock, in the place where our palace now ſtands, he told them if they would make him their king, they ſhould each have ſuch an houſe as his own; to this they agreed, and then he diſcovered the ſecret to them.

THIS Lallio directed the cutting out this whole city, divided the people into colonies where the waters were moſt plenty; and while half the people worked at the ſtreets and houſes, the other half brought them proviſions. In ſhort, he grew ſo powerful, that no one durſt diſpute his commands; all which authority he tranſmitted to his ſucceſſors, who finding by the increaſe of the people, and the many diviſions of them, that

they grew insolent, and ungovernable, they appointed a colamb in every province, as a vice-king, with absolute authority over all causes, except murther and treason, which are referred to the king and colambs in moucherratt.

As we had no want but of victuals and habitations, the king, when he gave a colambat, gave also all the lands and the fruits thereof, together with all the hot and cold springs in the colamb; who, again distributed parcels to the great officers under him; and they part of theirs, to the meaner officers under them, for their subsistance; with such a number of the common people, as was necessary, in respect to the dignity of the post each enjoyed; who for their services, are fed by their masters.

In all cases of war, the king lays before the moucherratt the number of his own troops he designs to send; when each colamb's quota being settled, at such a proportion of the whole, he forthwith sends his number from out of his lands, and also from the several officers under him; so that every man, let the number be ever so great, can be at the rendezvous in very few days.

We have but three professions, besides the ragam and soldiery, amongst us, and these are cooks, housemakers, and pike-makers; of which every colamb has several among his lands; and these, upon the new regulation, will be the only gainers, as they may work where they please, and according to their skill will be their provition; but how the poor labourers will be the better for it, I cannot see.

Dear Sir, says I, there are, you see, amongst us, some of such parts, that it is great pity they should be

confined from shewing them; and my meaning in giving liberty is, in order for what is to follow, that is, for the introduction of arts amongst you. Now every man who has natural parts will exert them, when any art is laid before him; and he will find so much delight in making new discoveries, that, did no profit attend it, the satisfaction of the discovery to a prying genius would compensate the pains: But, I propose a profit also to the artificer. Why, what profit? says my father, can arise, but food, and perhaps a servant of their own to provide it for them?

SIR, says I, the man who has nothing to hope, loses the use of one of his faculties; and if I guess right, and you live ten years longer, you shall see the state as much altered, as the difference has been between a lask and a tree he feeds on. You shall all be possessed of that, which will bring you fruits from the woods without a lask to fetch it; Those who were before your slaves, shall then take it as an honour to be employed by you; and at the same time shall employ others dependant on them; so that the great and small shall be under mutual obligations to each other, and both to the truly industrious artificer, and yet every one content only with what he merits.

DEAR Son, says my father, these will be glorious days indeed! But come, come, you have played a good part already; do not, by attempting what you cannot master, eclipse the glory so justly due to you.

No Sir, says I, nothing shall be attempted by me to my dishonour, for I shall ever remember my friend Glaulepzie. Sir, says I, see here, shewing him my watch; why this, says he, hung by my daughter's side

at Grandevolet. It did ſo, ſays I, and pray what did you take it for? A bot, ſays he. I thought ſo, ſays I, but as you aſked no queſtions, I did not then force the knowledge of it upon you. But put it to your ear; he did ſo; what noiſe is that, ſays he, is it alive? No, ſays I, it is not, but it is as ſignificant. If I aſk it what time of the day it is, or how long I have been going from this place to that; I look but in its face, and it tells me preſently.

My father looking upon it a good while, and perceiving that the minute hand had got further than it was at firſt; was juſt dropping it out of his hand, had I not caught it. Why, it is alive, ſays he, it moves! Sir, ſays I, if you had dropped it, you had done me an inexpreſſible injury. O, ho, ſays he, I find now how you do your wonders; it is ſomething you have ſhut up here that aſſiſts you, it is an evil ſpirit. Laughing heartily, he was ſorry for what he had ſaid, believing he had ſhewn ſome ignorance. No, Sir, ſays I, it is no ſpirit, good or evil, but a machine made by ſome of my countrymen, to meaſure time with. I have heard, ſays he, of meaſuring an abb, or the ground, or a rock; but never yet heard of meaſuring time. Why Sir, ſays I, do not you ſay three days hence I will do ſo; or ſuch a one is three years old? Is not that a meaſuring of time by ſo many days or years? Truly, ſays he, in one ſenſe I think it is. Now Sir, ſay I, how do you meaſure a day? Why by riſing and lying down, ſays he. But ſuppoſe I ſay, I will go now and come again, and have a particular time in my head when I will return. How ſhall I do, to make you know that time? Why, that will be afterwards, another time, ſays he, or I can think how long it will be. But, ſays I, how can you make me know, when you think it will be. You muſt

think too, says he. But then, says I, we may deceive each other by thinking differently. Now this will set us to rights; then I described the figures to him, telling him, how many parts they divided the day into, and that by looking on it, I could tell how many of such parts were passed; and that if he went from me, and said he would come at one, or two, or three parts hence, I should know when to expect him. I then shewed him the wheels, and explained where the force lay, and why it went no faster or slower, as well as I could; and from my desire of teaching, insensibly perfected myself more and more in it. So that beginning to have a little idea of it, he wished he had one; and, says he, will you teach all our people to make such things? Then they would be disregarded, Sir, says I. It is impossible, says he. I will tell you, Sir, how I mean, and I can hereafter shew you an hundred things as pleasing as this; now if every body was to make these, how would other things be made? Besides if every body made them, no body would want them, and then what would any body get by them, besides the pleasing their own fancy? But if only twenty men make them in the town, all the rest must come to them, and they who make these must go to one of twenty others, who make another thing that these men want, and so on by which means, every man wanting something he does now make, it will be the better for every maker of every thing.

So, says my father, excuse me, I am really ashamed now you have better informed me, I asked so foolish a question. I told him, we had a saying in my country, that every thing is easy when it is known. I think, says he, a man might find every thing in your country.

Two days after, my wife and daughter Sally came very early; but ſure no joy could be greater than ours at ſight of each other. I embraced them both over and over, as did my father; eſpecially Sally, who was a charming child. They told me I might expect every thing that evening, for they left them alighting at the height of Battingdrigg; for though they came out laſt, yet the body of the people with their baggage, could not come ſo faſt as they did. And little Sally ſaid, we ſtayed and reſted ourſelves purely, daddy, at Battingdrigg, before the crowd came, but as ſoon as mammy had ſeen all my brothers ſafe, who came before the reſt, and kiſſed Dicky, we ſet out again.

ABOUT ſeven hours after, arrived the ſecond convoy from abroad, that ever entered that country. I had too much to do with my wife and children that night, to ſpare a thought to my cargoe; ſo I only ſet a guard over them; for though I had now been married about ſixteen years, Youwarkee was ever new to me.

I WAS now obliged to the king again, for ſome additional conveniencies to my former apartment: and the young ones were mightily pleaſed to have ſo much more room than we had at home, and to ſee the ſweetnes; but finding themſelves waited upon in ſo elegant a manner, and by ſo many ſervants, for with our new rooms, we had all the ſervants belonging to them, they thought themſelves in a paradiſe to the grotto, where all we wanted, we were forced to help ourſelves to.

THE next day Tommy came to ſee us, the king having given him a very pretty poſt, ſince the death of Yaccambourſe; and Hallycarnie, with the princeſs

Jahamel her miſtreſs, who was mightily pleaſed to ſee Youwarkee in her Engliſh dreſs, and invited her and the children to her apartment.

It was but a few months ſince my wife ſaw the children, yet ſhe ſcarce knew them, they were ſo altered; for the two courtiers behaved with ſo much politeneſs, that their brothers and Sally looked but with an evil eye upon them, finding all the fault, and dropping as many little invidious expreſſions on them as poſſible; but I ſharply rebuked them: We were all made chiefly, I told them, to pleaſe our Maker, and that could be done only by the goodneſs of the heart; and if their hearts were more pure, they were the beſt children; but if they liked their brother and ſiſter's outward behaviour better than their own, they might ſo far imitate them.

When we were ſettled in our new apartment, I unpacked my chairs and table, and ſet out my ſideboard, and made ſuch a figure, as had never before been ſeen in that part of the world. I wanted now ſome ſhoes for Pedro, his own being almoſt paſt wear, for the young ones never had worn any, but could find none; till applying to Laſmoel, and ſhewing him what I wanted, he pointed to one of the great water-caſks; but as there were eleven of them big and little, I knew not where to begin, till having invited the king and ſeveral of the miniſters to dine with me, I was forced to look over my goods for ſeveral other things I ſhould want.

In my ſearch, I found half a ream of paper, a leather ink-bottle but no ink in it, ſome quills, and books of accounts, and ſeveral other things relative to writing,

This prize gave me courage to attempt the other cask; but I found little more that I immediately wanted. In the laſt caſk were ſeveral books, two of them romances, ſix volumes of Engliſh plays, two of devotion, the next were either Spaniſh or Portugueſe, and the laſt looked like a bible; but juſt opening it, and taking it to be of the ſame language, I put them all in again, thinking to divert myſelf with them ſome other time. I here found ſome more paper, and ſo many ſhoes, as when I had fellowed them, ſerved me as long as I ſtayed in the country.

HAVING as I ſaid before, invited the king to eat with me, I was ſorry I had not ordered my fowls to be brought, and Youwarkee ſaid, ſhe thought to have done it, but I had not wrote for them. I told her, I would ſend Maleck for ſome of them I was reſolved; for I ſhould pique myſelf on giving the king a diſh he had never before taſted. So I called Maleck, telling him, he muſt take thirty men with him to Graundevolet, and carry ſix empty cheſts with you, ſays I, and put eight of my fowls in each cheſt, and bring them with all expedition. Where do they lie, Sir, ſays he? You will find them at rooſt, ſays I when it is dark. I never was there, ſays he, and do not know the way. What, ſays I, never at Graundevolet? Yes, ſays he, but not at rooſt. I laughed, ſaying Maleck, did not you ſee fowls when you was there? He ſaid, he did not know what they were like? They are a bird, ſays I. And what ſort of a thing is that, ſays he? Youwee hearing us in this debate, Maleck, ſays ſhe, did not you ſee me toſs down little nuts to ſomething that you ſtared at, you ſaw them eat the nuts. O dear, ſays he, I know it very well, with two legs and no arms. The ſame, ſays I, Maleck; do you go look for a little houſe al-

most by my grotto, and at night you will find these things stand on sticks in that house. Take them down gently, and come away with them in the chests. Maleck performed his business to a hair, but instead of forty eight, brought me sixty, telling me he found the chests would hold them very well; and I kept them afterwards in the king's garden.

CHAP. XVIII.

Peter goes to his father's; traverses the black mountain; takes a flight to mount Alkoe; gains the miners; overcomes the governor's troops; proclaims Georigetti king; seizes the governor; returns him the government; Peter makes laws with the consent of the people; and returns to Brandleguarp with deputies.

NO further project being ripe for execution, I took a journey home with my father to Arndrumflike, and he would take all the children with him. Youwarkee and I stayed about six weeks, leaving all the children with my father.

UPON my return, I frequently talked to Maleck about his country; who they originally were, and how long it had been inhabited, and what other countries bordered thereon, and how they lay. He told me his countrymen looked upon themselves to be very ancient, but they were not very numerous; for the old stock was almost worn out, by the hardships they had undergone; that about three hundred years before, he said

as he had it from good report, there were a people from beyond the ſea, or as they called themſelves from the little lands, had ſtrangely over-ran them; and he had heard ſay, they would have over-run this country but they thought it would not anſwer. He ſaid, when thoſe people firſt came, they began to turn up the earth to a prodigious depth; and now, ſays he, bringing up ſome naſty hand earth, of ſeveral ſorts, they put it into great fires till it runs about like water, and then beat it about with great heavy things into ſeveral ſhapes; and ſome of it, Sir, ſays he, looks juſt like that ſtuff that lay at the bottom of your ſhip, and ſome almoſt white, and ſome red; for when I was a boy I was to have been ſent to work amongſt them as my father did; but it having killed him, I came hither, as many more have done, to avoid it. And what do they do with it, ſays I, when they have beat it about as you ſay? Then, ſays he, they carry it a long way to the ſea. What then, ſays I? Why then the little landers take it, and ſwim over the ſea with it. And what do they do with it, ſays I? Why, ſays he, there are other people who take it from them and go away with it. Why do they let them take it, ſays I? Becauſe, ſays he, they give them cloaths for it. Do they want cloaths, ſays I, more than you? He told me they had no graundee. And what other countries have you hereabout? There is one country, ſays he, north of Alkoe, where they ſay there is juſt ſuch another people as the little landers, and they get ſome of the things from mount Alkoe. What do they do with them, ſays I? I do not know, ſays he, they fetch a great deal, but they will not let any body come into their country. Is there no body inhabits between the mountain Alkoe and the ſea? He told me no, the little landers would not let them.

HAVING got what information I could from Maleck, and alſo from a countryman or two of his, he had brought to me; I conſidered it all over, and thinks I, if I could but get mount Alkoe to ſubmit, (for they had told me they were only governed by a deputy from the little lands) to ſee the work done, I might by intercepting the trade to the ſea, turn the profit of the country my own way, and make it paſs through our hands.

I NEXT enquired of thoſe who brought the fruits from the great foreſt, what ſort of land they had there; and found by their deſcription it was a light mould, and in many places well covered with graſs and herbs; and, by all the report I could hear, muſt be a fruitful country well managed; and being a flat country, and not encompaſſed on that ſide with the black mountain, was much higher than Doorpt Swangeanti. This news put me upon ſearching the truth of it; and I made the tour of the black mountain and the great foreſt, alighting often to make my obſervations. The foreſt is a little world of wood without end, with here and there a fine lawn very graſſy, and indeed the wood-grounds bear it very well, the trees not ſtanding in crowds, but at a healthy diſtance from each other. I went abundantly further than any one had ever before been, but no variation in the woody ſcene; and coming round weſtward home, I had a view of hoximo, which is nothing but a narrow cleft in the earth, on the top of the black mountain, of a moſt extraordinary depth; for upon dropping a ſtone down, you ſhall hear it ſtrike and hum for a long time before all is quiet again; and laying my ear over the cleft, whilſt I ordered one of my attendants to throw a large ſtone down; after the uſual thumps and humming, I imagined

I heard it dash in water, so that it is not impossible it may reach to the sea; which is at least six or seven miles below it. Into this hole all dead bodies are precipitated, from the king to the beggar; for four glumms holding by the ancles and wrists of the deceased, fly with them to hoximo, and throw them down, whilst the air is filled with the lamentations of the relations of the deceased, and of such others as are induced to follow the corps for the sake of the wines, on such occasions plentifully distributed to all comers by the gentry; and, in the best proportion they are able, by even the meanest amongst them.

AFTER a stay of about fourteen days at home, I fixed my next trip for mount Alkoe; and having told Maleck my design, he said, he would go with me with all his heart; but feared I should get no Brandleguarpine to bear me. For he told me they had an old tradition, that Mindrack (the devil) lived there, and would not go for all the world; which hath been the greatest security that country has had, for this would have devoured them else, says he.

I SHOKE to the king, to Nasgig, the ragams, and found them all unanimous, that the mountain Alkoe was the habitation of Mindrack, and that the noises which had been heard there were his servants beating bad men. Says I to myself, here is one of the usefullest projects upon earth spoiled, by an unaccountable prepossession; what must be done to overcome this prejudice?

I TOLD Maleck I found what he said to be too true, as to the people of Brandleguarp; but, says I, are there not enough of your countrymen here, to carry me thither; he believing there were, I ordered him to con-

trust with them; but it vexed me very much to be obliged to take these men. However, though I resolved to go, I chose to reason the ragams into the project, if I could; thinking they would soon bring the people over.

I CALLED several of the ragams together, and said: Because you are a wiser and more thinking people than the vulgar, I have applied myself to your judgments, in the affair of mount Alkoe. Now consider with yourselves, whether you have any real reason beyond a prepossession, for thinking these people fiends, or devil's servants, as you call them, without further examination; for according to my comprehension, they only understanding the nature of several sorts of earth, reduce them by labour and fire to solid substances, for the use of mankind; and the want of these things is the reason of your living as you do, without an hundredth part of the benefits of life. These sort of people, these noises, and these operations, which you hear and see carried on at Alkoe, are to be heard and seen in my country; and we deal and traffick with their labours, from one end of the world to the other; and we who are with them the happiest, without them should be the most miserable of people. Did not some of you see at my entertainment, what I called my knives, and forks, and spoons, my pistols, cutlasses, and silver cup; all these, and infinitely more, are the produce of these poor mens industry. Now, says I, if we settle a communication with these people, your dues will be all paid in these curious things; you will have your people employed in working them, and have strangers applying to you to serve them with what they want; who, in return, will give you what you want, and you will find yourself known and respected in the world. Finding some of

theſe arguments, applied to the men had ſtaggered them a little; I applied to their ſenſes. Says I, it ſtill appears to me that you have your prejudices hanging on you; but what will you ſay if I go thither, and return ſafe? will you be afraid to follow me another time? They perſuaded me from it as a dangerous experiment, but ſaid, if I did return, they would not think there was ſo much in it as they ſuſpected.

MALECK having choſen me out fourſcore of his countrymen, in about a month's time I trained them up to the knowledge of my piſtols, and cutlaſſes, and the management of them; and taking a cheſt with me for the arms and other neceſſaries, we ſallied up to the black mountain. I reſted there, and there Naſgig and Laſmeel overtook me; ſaying, that when they found me obſtinate to go, they could not in their hearts leave me, happen what would. This put new ſpirits into me, and we conſulted how the noiſes lay, and agreed to engage firſt upon the ſkirts of them, where the ſmokes were moſt ſtraggling. I charged ſix guns, and all my piſtols, which I kept in my cheſt, and ordered them to alight with me, about an hundred paces from the firſt ſmoke they ſaw; then ordered three of them to carry my guns after me, and twelve of them to take piſtols and follow me; but not to fire till I came orders. The remainder I left with the baggage.

WE marched up to the ſmoke, which iſſued out of a low arch-way juſt at the foot of the mountain. It was very light there with the flames of the vulcano, and entering the arch, a fellow ran at me with a red hot iron bar; him I ſhot dead, and ſeeing two more and a woman there, who ſtood with their faces to the wall of the hut or room, as unwilling to be ſeen, I ordered

Maleck to ſpeak to them in a known tongue, and tell them we were no enemies, nor intended them any hurt; and that their companion's fate was owing to his own raſhneſs, in running firſt at me with the hot bar, and that if they would ſhew themſelves good-natured and civil to us, we would be ſo to them; but if they offered to reſiſt openly, or uſe any manner of treachery towards us, they might depend upon the ſame fate their companion had juſt ſuffered.

UPON hearing of this they approached us, and ſhewing great tokens of ſubmiſſion, I delivered my gun to Maleck, and bid them go on with their work, ordering all the guns out of the ſhop for fear of a ſpark. I then perceived they were direct forges, but made after another manner from ours, their wind being made by a great wheel, like a wheel of a water-mill, which worked with the fans or wings in a large trough, and cauſed a prodigious iſſue of air, through a ſmall hole in the fire-place. They were then drawing out iron-bars.

I GAVE each of theſe men, and alſo to the woman, a dram of brandy; which they ſwallowed down very greedily, and looked for more, and ſeemed very pleaſant. I then inquired into the trade, by whom, and how it was carried on? and they told me juſt as Maleck had done. I then aſked where the mines lay? and one of them looking full at me, ſaid, then you know what we are about. Yes, ſays I, very well; he told me, the mine was, in his language as Maleck interpreted it, about a quarter of a mile off, and directed me to it. I ordered them to go on with their work, telling them, though I left a guard over them, it was only that they might not raiſe their neighbours to diſturb me; though

if they did, I ſhould ſerve them all as I had done their companion, and left four men with piſtols at the arch-way.

I PROCEEDED to the iron mine, but ſuppoſe the men were all within; for I ſaw no body, but there were many large heaps of ore lying, which I felt of, and, being vaſtly heavy, I ſuppoſed it might be rich in metal.

I RETURNED to my men at the arch, and aſked them, what other mines there might be in that country, and of what other metals; but Maleck not knowing the metals themſelves, was not able to interpret the names they called them by. I then ſhewed them an Engliſh half-penny, a Portugueſe piece of ſilver money, and my gold watch, and aſking if they had any of thoſe, they pointed to the half-penny and ſilver piece, but ſhook their heads at the watch. I then ſhewed them a muſket ball, and they ſaid, they had a great deal of that.

I DESIRED them to ſhew me the way to the copper mine, pointing my finger to the half-penny, and told them, if they would go with me, they ſhould have ſome more, pointing to my brandy, and they readily agreed, if I would ſtand by them for leaving their work. I believe, it might be two miles further on the right to the copper mine, and as theſe men had the graundee, I expected they would have flown by me; but I found they had a light chain round their graundee, which prevented them, ſo I walked too, and having made them my friends, by being familiar with them, I deſired they would go in, and let the head man of the works know, that a ſtranger deſired to ſpeak with him and view the works, and to inform him how peaceable I was, if he uſed me civilly, but that I could ſtrike him dead at once, if he did not.

I do not know how they managed, or what report they made, but the man came to me very courteously, and I bad Maleck ask if he came in friendship, as I did to him; and he giving me that assurance, I went in with him, taking Naggig and Maleck with me, and leaving our five arms without. I ordered them both, as I did myself, to carry their cutlasses sheathed in their hands, for fear of a surprize. We saw a great quantity of copper ore, and several melting fats, being just at the mouth of the mine; the mine running horizontally into the side of the mountain, and, as they said, was very rich. I gave the head man a little brandy, and two or three more of them, who had been industrious in shewing things to me.

I DESIRED the fore man to walk out with me, and asking how long he had been in that employ, he told me he was a native of the Born isles, and was brought thither very young, where he first wrought in the iron, then in the silver, and now in this mine. That he had been there twenty years, and never expected to be delivered from his miserable slavery; but as he was now overseer of that work he did pretty well, though nothing like freedom. He told me, they expected several new slaves quickly; for the mines killed those they did not agree with, so fast, they were very thinly wrought at present, and that the governor was gone to the isles to get [illegible] men. I was glad to hear this; and pray, says I, where does the governor reside? He, pointing to the place, told me. And what guard, says I may be kept? About four hundred men, but nobody durst molest him, says he, for he tortures them in such a manner, never killing them, that not the least thing can be done against his will.

AFTER we had talked a good while on the miſery of ſlavery, and finding him a man fit for my purpoſe, I aſked him if he would go with me to Brandleguarp, for, ſaid I, there are certainly good mines in thoſe mountains; and if you will overlook them, you ſhall be free and have whatever you deſire. He ſhook his head, ſaying, how could he expect to be free where all the reſt were ſlaves; and beſides, ſays he, they are in ſuch commotions among themſelves, that it is ſaid the ſtate will be torn to pieces. You are miſtaken, ſays I, very much, I myſelf have ſettled peace amongſt them, and killed the uſurper. Is it poſſible, ſays he, and are you the man it was ſaid they expected to come out of the ſea? The very ſame ſays I, and as to ſlavery, there is not a ſlave in the whole kingdom, nor ſhall be here if you will hearken to me. That would be a good time indeed, ſays he. Well, ſays I, my friend, I promiſe you it ſhall be ſo; only obſerve this, that when I come to reduce the governor, do none of you miners aſſiſt him. He promiſed he would let the other miners ſecretly know it, and all ſhould be as I wiſhed; but deſired me to be expeditious, for the governor was expected every day.

I WENT from him to the other mines, and my guides with me; who ſeeing me ſo well received at the copper mine, and reporting it to the others, it cauſed my proceedings to go on ſmoothly, and my offers to be readily embraced wherever I came.

HAVING prepared matters thus, I ſet Maleck and his countrymen upon the natives, to treat with them about ſubmiſſion to Georigetti, on promiſe of freedom, who being aſſured of what I had done at Brandleguarp, and in hopes of like liberty, readily came into it; ſo

that the only thing remaining was before the governor's return to attack the soldiery. Having therefore renewed my engagements with the miners, and believing myself upon as good terms with the natives as I could wish; I was advised by Nafgig and Lasineel to return for cannon and a large army, before I attacked the soldiery: But I who had all my life rode upon the spur, having considered, that an opportunity once lost is never to be regained; and though I could have wished for some cannon, I valued the men but for shew, I therefore formed my resolves to march with the force I had next morning, and pitch upon a plain just by the governor's garrison, in order if I could to draw his men out. I did so, and it answered; for upon the first news of my coming, they appeared with a sort of heavy headed weapons; which hurling round, they throw upwards, asiope, in order to light upon the backs of their enemies in flight, and beat them down; but they could not throw them above thirty paces.

I sat still in my chair, with a gun in my hand, and Malcok with another at my elbow, with four more lying by me ready to be presented; Lasineel standing by me to charge again as fast as we fired. I ordered a party of twenty of my men with cutlasses, to attack the van of the enemy, by rushing impetuously upon them, the[illegible]ing but thin against me; for I was not willing to employ my pieces, till I could do more execution. They began the attack about an hundred yards before me, not very high in the air; and my cutlass-men having avoided the first flight of their weapons, fell upon them with such fury, that chopping here a limb, and there a graundee, which disabling their flight was equally pernicious, they fell by scores before me; but I seeing those in the rear, which made a body of

near three hundred, coming very swift and close in treble ranks one above the other, hoping to bear down my handful of men with their numbers; I ordered my men all to retire behind me, and not till the enemy were passed over my head to fall on them. Maleck and I, as they came near, each firing a piece together, and whipping up another, and then another in an instant; they fell round us, roaring and making a horrid yell. This, the rest seeing, went over our men's heads, not without many falling from the cuts of my men; and those who escaped were never heard of more.

THE miners, who from their several stations had beheld the action, came singing and dancing from every quarter round me; and if I had not drawn my men close in a circle about me, would probably out of affection have done me more hurt than two of the governor's armies; for against those, common gratitude denied the use of force, and they crowding every one but to touch me they said; for fear of being pressed to death myself, as some of them almost were, I ordered them to be let in through my men, at one side of the ring, and passing by and touching me, to be let out on the other side; and this quite quieted them, but kept me in penance a long time.

WE then marched in a body all into the town, where we were going to proclaim George king of mount Alkoe; when a surly fellow, much wiser than the rest, as he thought, being about to harangue the people against being too hasty in it, was knocked down and trod to death for his pains; and we went on with the proclamation, giving general liberty to all persons without exception.

THE next thing to be conſidered was, how to oppoſe the governor when he came; and for that purpoſe I enquired into the manner of his coming, the road he came, and his attendants; and being informed, that an hundred of his guards who had not the graundee, waited for him at the ſea-ſide, and that he had no other guard, except a few friends and the ſlaves he went for, and that the ſlaves always came firſt ſix in a rank tied together, under convoy of a few of his guards; I went in perſon to view the rout he came and ſeeing a very convenient poſt by the ſide of a thick wood, through which they were to paſs, and from whence we might ſee them before they came near us; I poſted a watch on the ſea-ſide of the wood, and myſelf and men lay on the hither ſide of it, juſt where the governor's party muſt come out of it again; ſo that my watch giving notice of their approach, we might be ready to fall on, at their coming out of our ſide of the wood.

WHEN we had waited three days, our watch brought word they were coming; ſo we kept as cloſe as poſſible, letting the ſlaves and guards march on, who came by about two hours march before the governor; but ſo ſoon as he approached, I drew up my men on the plain within the wood, in ranks, ordering them to lie cloſe on their bellies till they ſaw me riſe, and then to riſe, follow me, and obey orders.

SEVERAL of the firſt ranks having paſſed the wood, juſt as the governor had entered the open country, I roſe, and bad Maleck call aloud, that if any of them ſtirred or lifted up a weapon, he was a dead man; and then ſeeing one of the foremoſt running, I fetched him down with a muſquet-ſhot, bidding Maleck tell the reſt, that if they ſubmitted, and laid down their wea-

pons, they were ſafe; but if they refuſed, I would ſerve them all as I had done him who fled. This ſpeech, with the terror of the gun, fixed every man to his place like a ſtatue.

I THEN went forward to the governor, and by Maleck my interpreter, aſked him, who they all were with him? he told me his ſlaves. I then made him call every man before him and give him freedom; which, finding no way to avoid, for I looked very ſtern, he did, and I had enough to do to quiet my new freemen, who I thought would have devoured me for joy. I aſked whither he was going? he ſaid to his government. Under whom do you hold it, ſays I? Under the Zaps of the Iſles, ſays he. I then told him, that whoever held that government for the future, muſt receive it from the hands of Georigetti, the king of that country, to whom all the natives and miners had already engaged their fidelity. I told him, both natives and foreigners had been all declared free.

THE governor ſeemed much dejected, and told me, he hoped I would not uſe him or his company ill. I told him, that depended intirely on his own and their good behaviour. I aſked who his friends were that were with him, he ſaid, they were ſome of the Zaps relations, who were come to ſee the methods of the government, and inſpect the mines.

ORDERING all the governor's guards and friends to go before, and all my own but Maleck, to keep backwards ſome paces; I entered into diſcourſe with him about the ſtate of the iſles, and the country of Alkoe, and finding him a judicious perſon, and not a native of the iſles, I thought with ſome management he might prove

a uſeful perſon to me, but did not like the character I had heard of his ſeverity; ſo I plainly told him, that only one thing prevented my making him a greater man than he ever was; which was I had been informed he had a roughneſs in his nature, which drove him to extremities with the poor ſlaves, which I could not bear. Sir, ſays he, whatever a man is in his natural temper, where ſlavery abounds, it is neceſſary to act, or at leaſt to be thought to do ſo, in a mercileſs manner. I am intruſted with the government of a land of only ſlaves, who have no more love, nor are they capable of any for me, than the herbs of the ground have. I am to render an account to my maſters of their labours; they work by force, and would not ſtir a ſtep without it, or the fear of correction; for which reaſon, the rod muſt be ever held over them; and though I ſeldom let it fall, when I do, the ſuffering of one is too long remembered, to permit others quickly to ſubject themſelves to the like puniſhment. And this method I judged to be the moſt mild, as the death or ſufferings of one though but ſeldom, muſt though ever ſo ſevere, be milder than the frequent execution of numbers. And as to my appearing ſevere to them, my poſt required it; for mercy to ſlaves, being interpreted into fear, arms them with violence againſt you.

I COULD not gainſay this, eſpecially as he told me he was glad I had freed them all; for no man, ſays he, but if he were to chuſe, would rather reign by love, which he may in a free country, but is impracticable in one of ſlaves, rather than by fear, which alone will keep the latter in ſubjection.

I ASKED him, whether as he knew the nature of the country, and the buſineſs of the governor, he could

become faithful to my master Georigetti. He told me he had ever been faithful to his masters the Zaps; and would till he was sure, without suspecting in the least my veracity, all was true that I was pleased to tell him; for nothing could satisfy his conscience, but being an eye-witness of it; and then being discharged from any further capacity of serving them in an open way, he should be free to chuse his own master; of all whom, Georigetti should to him be most preferable; but begged me not to interpret his desire of retaining fidelity to his old masters till he could no longer serve them, into an implication of assisting them, by either open or concealed practices; for wherever he engaged, he would be true to the utmost.

. . . . . .

At the end of six days, for I travelled on foot with them, we arrived at the governor's palace, which we found without a guard, and all the slaves he had sent before him at liberty: So I ordered my men to supply the usual guard, and took my lodging in the governor's apartment.

. . . . . .

As Gadsi, for that was the governor's name, was not confined, or any of his friends; he came into my apartment and told me, since he had found all things answered my report; if I pleased, he would quit the palace to me, and every thing belonging to the government. I told him, he said well: He did so, taking with him only some few things, his own property. So soon as he was without the territory of the palace, I sent for him and his friends back again; he could not help being dejected at his return, fearing some mischief. Gadsi, says I, this palace, and this country which I now hold for my master Georigetti, I deliver in custody to you as his governor; and now charge you to make ac-

knowledgement of your fidelity to him. Then taking it from him in terms of my own propoſing, I delivered him the regalia of his government, charging him to maintain freedom; but, ſays I, let no man eat, who will not work, as the country and the produce is the king's.

. . . . . .

I THEN ſummoned an aſſembly of the people, and ſent notice to all the miners to attend me. I told them, all that the king deſired of them was, to make themſelves happy; and as the mines at preſent, ſays I, are the only employment of this country, I would have it agreed by your own conſent, for I will force nothing upon you, that every man amongſt you from ſixteen to ſixty, ſhall work every third week at the mines and other duties of the government, and two weeks out of three ſhall be your own to provide in for your families. And if I live to come back again, you ſhall each man have ſo much land of his own, as ſhall be ſufficient for his family; and I will make it my buſineſs to ſee for ſeeds to improve it with. And this week's work in three, and if afterwards it can be done with leſs, in four, ſhall be an acknowledgment to the king for his bounty to you. Do you agree to this? They all with one voice cried out, we do. Then, ſays I, agree amongſt yourſelves, and part into proper diviſions for carrying on the work; and that is, into four parts, one for each ſort of metal; and then, again, each of thoſe four into three parts; and on every ſeventh day in the morning, let thoſe who are to begin, meet thoſe who are leaving off work; ſo that there be clear ſix days work, and one of going and returning. Do you all agree to this? All cried, we do. Then, ſays I, whoever neglects his duty, unleſs through ſickneſs, or by leave of the governor, ſhall work a double week. Do

you agree to this? We do. Then all matters of difference between you shall be decided by the governor; and in case of any injury or injustice, or wrong judgment in the governor, by Georigetti. Do you agree? We do. Then, says I, agree upon ten men, two for the natives, and two for each mineral work, to send with me to Brandleguarp, to petition Georigetti to confirm these laws till you shall make others yourselves, and to acknowledge his sovereignty. Do you agree? We do.

I then told them, that as those who had been slaves, were now free, they might, if they pleased, return home; but as I should make it my endeavour to provide so well for them in all the comforts of life, I believed most of them would be of opinion, their interest would keep them where they were. And above all things, recommending a hearty union between the new freemen and the natives, and to marry amongst each other, and to continue in love amongst themselves, and duty to the king and his governor; and promising speedily to return and settle what was wanting, I dismissed the assembly, and set out for Brandleguarp with the ten deputies; but I left Lasmeel behind with the governor, and two servants with him to give me immediate notice, in case any disturbance should happen in my absence.

CHAP. XIX.

Peter arrives with the deputies; presents them to the king; they return; a colony decreed to be sent thither; Nasgig made governor; manner of chusing the colony; a flight-race, and the intent of it; Walsi wins the prize, and is found to be a gawrey.

AS we alighted at the palace late at night, I kept the deputies with me till next morning; when I went to the king desiring them to stay in my apartment, till I had received his majesty's orders for their admission.

THE king was but just up when I came in, and seeing me, embraced me, saying, dear father, I am glad to meet you again alive; your stay has given me the utmost perplexity, and could I have prevailed with any of my servants to have followed you, I had sent before this time to have known what was become of you.

I TOLD his majesty, the greatest pleasure of my life consisted in the knowledge of his majesty's esteem for me; and he might depend upon it, I would take care of myself from a double motive, whilst I was in his dominions; the one from the natural obligation of my own preservation, and the other equally compulsive, of continuing serviceable to his majesty, till I had made him more famous than his ancestor, the great Begforbeck.

I TOLD his majesty, as a small token of my duty and affection to him, I was come to make him a tender of the additional title of king of mount Alkoe. Father, says he, we shall never be able to get a sufficient number of my subjects to go thither; for though your safe return may be some encouragement, yet whilst their old apprehensions subsist, and I know not what will alter them, we can do no good; and indeed were they free to go, and under no suspicion of danger, it would cost abundance of men to conquer mount Alkoe.

GREAT Sir, said I, you mistake me; I told you I came to make you a tender of it; I have proclaimed you king there, and freedom to the people; I have held an assembly of the kingdom, placed a governor, taken the engagement of himself and subjects to you; settled laws amongst them; for your benefit, the full third part of all their labour; have brought ten deputies, two from each denomination of people amongst them; and they only wait your command to be admitted, to beg your acceptance of their submission, and pray your royal protection.

FATHER, says the king, you amaze me! but as it is your doing let them come in.

THE deputies being received, and heard by Maleck their interpreter, very graciously; the king told them in a very favourable speech, that whatever his father had done or should do, they might accept as done by himself, and commanded them to remind the governor, for whom he had the highest esteem, to observe the laws, without the least deviation, till his father should make such further additions, as were consistent with his own honour, and their future freedom; and having feast-

ed them in a moſt magnificent manner, they returned highly ſatisfied with the honours they had received.

THIS tranſaction being immediately noiſed abroad; all the colambs came themſelves, and the great cities by their deputies, ſent his majeſty their compliments upon the occaſion; and there was nothing but mirth and rejoicing throughout the whole kingdom. And thoſe who had refuſed going with me, as Maleck told me, hung their heads for ſhame and ſorrow, that they had miſſed the opportunity of bearing a part in the expedition.

I DEMONSTRATED to the king, that the only way to preſerve that kingdom was to ſettle a large colony on the plains, between the mountain and the ſea, to intercept clandeſtine trade, and make a ſtand againſt any force that might be ſent from the little lands, to recover the mines. And I promiſed to be preſent at the ſettlement, and an aſſiſtant in it.

MOST of the colambs, as I ſaid, being at court, upon this complimentary affair, the king ſummoned them, for their advice on my propoſals; and told them, he had ordered me to lay before them my thoughts on the affairs of that kingdom; and after many compliments and encomiums had paſſed on me, I told them, the neceſſity of the colony, the commodities that would ariſe from it, how I intended to manage it, and what proſpect I had of introducing amongſt them ſeveral extraordinary conveniencies they had never before had.

THE colambs, who for want of practice this way, knew but little of the matter; thinking nevertheleſs, that in the general turn of things, they muſt ſomehow

come in for a ſhare; approved of all I ſaid. I deſired them to ſettle, out of what part of the people, and how to be nominated, ſuch choice of the colony ſhould be made for the new ſettlement: but found them much at a loſs for the method of doing it. So I told them, I believed it would be the beſt way to iſſue an order, for ſuch as would willingly go, to repair to a particular rendezvous; and in caſe ſufficient ſhould not appear voluntary, to iſſue another order, that the colambs out of their ſeveral diſtricts, ſhould compleat the number: ſo as to make a body of 12000 men of arms, beſides women and children; and that ſuch a territory ſhould be allotted to each, with ſo much wood grounds, in common to all, as would ſuffice for their ſubſiſtence, all which paſſed the vote.

I THEN told them, that this large people muſt have an head or governor, to keep them to their duties, and to determine matters of property, and all diſputes amongſt them. Here, they one and all nominated me; but I told them, I apprehended I could be more uſeful other ways, having too many things in my head for the general good, to confine myſelf to any particular province; but if they would excuſe me, in preſuming to recommend a perſon, it ſhould be Naſgig. And immediately Naſgig being ſent for, and accepting it, they conferred it upon him.

ALL things, as I judged, went on in ſo ſmooth a way in reference to the new colony, that I was preparing, with the aſſiſtance of the proper officer, expreſſes to be ſent with the king's gripſack, into the ſeveral provinces, with notice of theſe orders, and an appointment for a rendezvous. But while this was doing, abundance of people came crowding about me, to be informed,

whether I thought it ſafe for them to go; and, I believe, I had fully ſatisfied all their ſcruples; when, by ſome management of the ragams, who having ſo long declared mount Alkoe to be inhabited by Mindrack, did not care the people ſhould all of a ſudden find out they had deceived them, there was a report ran current, that tho' I, and my bearers, who were all mount Alkoe men, returned ſafe; yet if any of the Bradleguarpians had gone, they would never have come back again. This rumour coming to my ears, and fearing whitherto it might grow. I had no ſmall proſpect of a diſappointment: And thereupon ſtopped iſſuing the orders, till I had conſidered what further to do in the affair; at length, being perſuaded I had already ſatisfied abundance of their ſcruples, and in order to diſſipate the doubts of others, and to familiarize them in ſome meaſure to the country and people of mount Alkoe; I propoſed a prize to be flown for, and gave notice of it for ſix days all about the country, both to thoſe of mount Alkoe, and thoſe of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti: That whoever, except thoſe who were with me in the late expedition, ſhould make the moſt ſpeedy flight to the governor's of mount Alkoe, to carry a meſſage, and bring me an anſwer from Laſmeel, ſhould have one of my piſtols, with a quantity of powder, and ſo many balls; and the perſon who ſhould be ſecond, ſhould have a cutlaſs and belt. The time being fixed, very few had entered in the firſt two days; but on the third day came ſeveral over from Alkoe to enter; which the Brandleguarpines ſeeing, and having equal inclination to the prize; after half a dozen of them had entered on the fourth morning, before noon on the fifth I had near ſixty of them on my liſt, beſide the Alkoe men; making in all about one hundred men.

THE time of ſtarting was fixed for the ſixth morning, from off the rock, on the back-ſide of the palace; upon my firing a piſtol.

THIS unuſual diverſion occaſioned a prodigious confluence of ſpectators; for ſcarce a perſon in Brandleguarp, except thoſe who were either too young or too old for flight, but were upon one or other of the rocks; even the king himſelf, and all his court were there; with infinite numbers from all diſtant parts.

I HAD diſpatched a letter by one of my old bearers to Laſmeel ſome days before, to inform him of it, that he might get two letters ready wrote, one to deliver to the firſt, and another to the ſecond meſſenger; but not to take further notice of the reſt: Now my flight race being for the equal benefit of both the kingdoms, it happened, as I was in hopes it would, that ſo many of the mount Alkans coming over to me to be entered, and ſtaying with me till the flight began; and ſuch vaſt numbers of perſons meeting of both nations upon the black mountain, to ſee them go and return; and ſeveral of the Swangeantines going, out of bravado, quite through with the flyers; the intercourſe of the two nations was that day ſo great, and the diſcourſe they had with the natives and miners ſo ſtripped the Swangeantines of their old apprehenſions of danger from mount Alkoe; that in three days after, the whole dread of the place was vaniſhed, and he would then have been thought mad, who had attempted to revive it.

THE time being come, I ſet my flyers in a row on the outer edge of the rock; and having given notice, that no one ſhould preſume to riſe till the flyers were on the graundee, and at ſuch a diſtance; I then let the

flyers know, I ſhould very ſoon give fire; which I had no ſooner done, but down they all dropt as one man and as it were head-long from the edge of the mountain; and preſently the whole field were after them. They ſkimmed with incredible ſwiftneſs croſs the face of the plain, between the rock and the mountain; the force of which deſcent ſwung them as it were up the mountain's ſide, in an almoſt upright poſture; till ſeeming to ſweep the edge of the mountain with their bellies, they ſlid over its ſurface, till they were loſt in the body of the Swangean; our rocks echoing the ſhouts of the mountaineers. I fired my piſtol by my watch, at nine o'clock in the morning; but had no occaſion to enquire when it was thought they would return; for every one was paſſing his opinion upon it. Some ſaid it could not be till midnight, or very near it, and others, that it would be almoſt next morning. However, we went to dinner, and coming again about ſix o'clock by my watch, I was told by the people on the rock, as the general opinion, for it was then top full, that they could not yet be expected a long time, and the major part concluded, they could not be near half way home yet; when on a ſudden, we heard a prodigious ſhout from the mountain; which growing nearer and nearer to us, and louder and louder; in a few moments came a ſlim young fellow, and nimbly alighting on the rock, tripped briſkly forward, as not able to ſtop himſelf at once, from the violence of the force he came with; and delivered me a letter from Laſmeel, as I was ſitting in my chair. I gave him joy of the prize, and ordered him to come to my apartment, ſo ſoon as I got home, and he ſhould have it. I then aſked him where he left the other flyers; he told me he knew nothing of them, ſince he came paſt the forges in his return; for there he met them going to Laſmeel. Why that, ſays

I, muſt be a great way on this ſide the governor's. He told me about half an hour's flight. I then told him as he muſt be ſtrained with ſo hard a flight, it would be better if he lay down, and called on me in the morning. He thanked me very kindly, and after he had told me his name was Walſi, he ſaid he would take my advice, and ſpringing up as light as air, went off: The rock being quite thronged with thoſe who had followed from the mountain, to ſee the victor.

WHEN Walſi came in, it was juſt ſeven o'clock by my watch; ſo that according to the beſt computation by miles, I could make from their deſcriptions of things, I judged he had flown at little more or leſs, than at the rate of a mile a minute.

I STAYED till near nine o'clock upon the rock; where it being cold, and the time tedious, I was taking Quilly home with me, and deſigned that Maleck ſhould wait for the coming of the ſecond; but hearing again a ſhout from the mountain, I reſolved to ſee the ſecond come in myſelf. The noiſe increaſing, I preſently ſaw the whole air full of people, very near me, for I had retired near two hundred paces from the edge of the rock, to give room to the flyers to alight, and expected nothing leſs than to be borne down by them; when I ſpied two competitors, one juſt over the back of the other; the uppermoſt bearing down upon the other's graundee; their heads being juſt equal, ſo that the under man perceiving it impoſſible to ſink lower for the rock, or to mount higher for the man above him; and as darting ſide ways would loſe time, and fearing to bruſh his belly againſt the rock, he ſlakened juſt to job his head in his antagoniſt's ſtomach; which giving the upper man a ſmart check with the pain; and the under

ſtriking, at that inſtant, one bold ſtroke with his graundee, fell juſt with his head at my feet, and the other upon him, with his head in the under man's neck.

THUS they lay for a conſiderable time breathleſs and motionleſs, ſave the working of their lungs, and heaving of their breaſts; when each aſked me, if he was not the firſt; and the under man giving me a letter, I told them no, Walſi had been in almoſt two hours ago. They both ſaid it was impoſſible, they were ſure no glumm in the Doorpt could outfly either of them. I ordered them both to call on me in the morning, and I would ſee they ſhould have right done to their pretenſions. The under man had but juſt told me his name was Naggitt; when another arrived, who ſeeing Naggitt before him, told me he was ſure he was ſecond, but on ſeeing the other alſo, he gave it up.

I WOULD ſtay no longer, it being now ſo late; but the next morning I was informed, that all the reſt had ſtopped at the mountain but two; who were obliged to give out before, being overſtrained, and unable to hold it.

THE next morning, Walſi was the firſt at my apartment, when I happening to be with the king, and ſpeaking of his buſineſs to Quilly, he ordered him to ſtay in my gallery till I came back; and Quilly preſently after ſeeing Youwarkee, told her the victor at the flight race was waiting for me in the gallery. Youwarkee, who had great curioſity to ſee him, having heard how long he came in before the reſt, ſtepped into the gallery, and taking a turn or two there, fell into diſcourſe with him about his flight. And as women are very inquiſitive, ſhe diſtinguiſhed by the flyer's anſwers,

ſpeech, ſhape, and manner of addreſs, that it was certainly a gawrey ſhe was talking with; though ſhe had endeavoured to diſguiſe herſelf, by rolling in her hair, and tying it round her head with a broad chaplet like a man; and by the thinneſs of her body, and flatneſs of her breaſts, might fairly enough have paſſed for one to a leſs penetrating eye than Youwarkee's. But Youwarkee putting ſome queſtions to her, and ſaying ſhe was more like a gawrey than a glumm, ſhe put the poor girl, for ſo it was, to the bluſh, and at laſt ſhe confeſſed the deceit; but, upon her knees, begged Youwarkee not to mention it, for it would be her undoing.

THIS confeſſion gave Youwarkee a fair opportunity of aſking how ſhe came to be an adventurer for this ſort of prize. The girl, finding there was no remedy, frankly confeſſed, ſhe had a ſtrong affection for a glumm boſs, who was a very ſtout glumm, ſhe ſaid, but ſomewhat too corpulent for ſpeedy flight; who ever ſince the prize had been propoſed, could reſt neither night nor day, to think he was not ſo well-qualified to put in for it as others; eſpecially one Naggitt, who he well knew made his addreſſes to her; and alſo was an adventurer. Had it been a matter of ſtrength, valour, or manhood, ſays he, I had had the beſt of chances for it; but to be under a natural incapacity of obtaining ſo glorious a prize, as even the king himſelf is not maſter of ſuch another, I cannot bear it. She then ſaid, he had told her, he was reſolved to give in his name, and do his utmoſt though he died in the flight. What! ſaid he, ſhall I ſee Naggitt run away with it, and perhaps with you too, when he has that to lay at your feet, which no glumm elſe can boaſt of? No, I will overcome, or never come home without it. I muſt confeſs,

Madam, ſays Walſi, as I knew his high ſpirit could never bear to be vanquiſhed, I was afraid he would be as good as his word, and come to ſome unlucky end; and told him, that though he need not have feared being conqueror in any thing elſe, had it been propoſed; yet in flight, there were ſo many, half glumms as they were, who from their effeminate make and ſize, and little value for any thing elſe, would certainly be in before him; that it was unworthy of a thorough glumm to contend with them, for what could be obtained only by thoſe, who had no right to, or ſhare in any thing more excellent, and that he muſt therefore not think of more than his fatigue for his pains. But as he had ſet his heart ſo much upon it, I would enter, and try to get it for him, as from my ſize and make, I believed few would have a better chance for it than myſelf. And thanks to Collwarr, Madam, ſays ſhe, I hope to make him eaſy in it, if you will but pleaſe to conceal your knowledge of who, and what I am.

YOUWARKEE was mightily pleaſed with her ſtory, and promiſed ſhe would; but engaged her to come again to her apartment, ſo ſoon as ſhe was poſſeſſed of the prize.

WHEN I returned, hearing Walſi waited for me, I called him in, read the letter he brought, and finding it Laſmeel's, I looked over my liſt for Walſi's name; for I ſet them all down as they entered, and finding it the very laſt name of all, and that it was entered but on the morning the race was flown: So, ſays I, Walſi, I find the laſt at entering is the firſt at returning; but I ſee you have been there, by what Laſmeel has ſent me, though there were ſome laſt night, who queſtioned it, by your ſo ſpeedy return. Here, ſays I, take the prize,

and see they are only used in the service of your country, and then I dismissed him.

My two competitors appeared next, for the cutlass; and had each of them many arguments to prevail with me, in favour of him; but I told them I must do justice, and that, though the difference was so very small between them, yet certainly Naggitt was the nearest me, at the time they both ceased flight, his face lying on my foot; so that as they both complained of foul play, and were therefore equal in that respect; Naggitt in justice must have it. And I gave it him, with these words however; take it Naggitt, as certainly yours by the law of the race, but with a diffidence in myself who best deserves it.

I own I pitied the other man's case very much; as I should Naggitt's, had the other won it; but seeing the other turning away, and hearing him say, but by half a head! when I had strove so hard! as in a sort of dejection; I told them, they were both brave glumms, and of intrepid resolution; and gave him also one, with the like instruction as to Walsi.

Walsi went from me, as she had promised to Youwarkee, who wanted more discourse with her; for in an affair of love, her gentle heart could have dwelt all day, upon any circumstances which would create delight in the enamoured. Youwarkee found Walsi sat on thorns, wanting to be gone; but Youwarkee asking question upon question, Walsi got up, and begged she would excuse her, she would come and stay at any other time, but, says she, Madam, when the man one loves is in pain, for I am sure he is on the rack, for fear of a discovery, till he sees me; if you ever loved

yourſelf, you cannot blame me for preſſing to relieve him.

WHEN ſhe was gone, Youwarkee finding me alone, was ſo full of Walſi's adventure, ſhe could not be ſilent; but after twenty round about ſpeeches, and promiſes that I was to make not to be angry with any body, or undo any thing I had done that day, and I know not what; out came the ſtory. I was prodigiouſly pleaſed with it, and wiſhed I had taken more notice of her. Says Youwarkee, I endeavoured to keep her till you had done, that you might have ſeen her. And why did not you, ſays I? My dear, ſays Youwee, had you ſeen the poor creature's uneaſineſs, till ſhe got off with it, yourſelf could not have had the heart to have deferred that pleaſure, you would have perceived ſhe expected when ſhe came home; nor could you in conſcience have detained her.

CHAP. XX.

The race reconciles the two kingdoms; the colony proceeds; builds a city; Peter views the country at a diſtance; hears of a prophecy of the king of Norbon's daughter Stygee; goes thither; kills the king's nephew; fulfils the prophecy, by engaging Stygee to Georigetti; returns.

THIS race, notwithſtanding all that the ragams could ſay to keep up their credit, and to prevent the people perceiving what fools they had made of them; had ſo good and ſudden an effect on the peoples prejudices; that upon iſſuing the firſt proclamation, there was no occaſion for the ſecond; for at leaſt twenty five thouſand men appeared voluntary at the rendezvous, of the old ſlaves, whoſe maſters, though they were declared free, had uſed divers devices to oppreſs them, and render even their freedom a ſort of ſlavery, beſides women and children: So that we had now only to pick and chooſe thoſe who would be likelieſt to be of ſervice to the new colony.

NASCIG and I differed now about the choice of perſons; he as a ſoldier, was for taking moſtly ſingle young men, and I for taking whole families; though ſome were either too old or too young for war; and upon further conſideration, he agreed with me; for I told him, young men would leave a father, mother, or miſtreſs behind them, which would either cauſe a hankering after home, and conſequently the bad example of deſertion; or elſe create an uneaſy ſpirit, and perhaps a general diſtaſte to the ſettlement; ſo we choſe

thoſe whole families, where they offered, which had the moſt young men in them firſt; then others in like order; after that man by man; aſking them ſeverally, if any woman they liked would go with them; and if ſo we took her, till we had about thirteen thouſand fighting men, beſides old men, women and children; and then marching by the palace, the king ordered ten days ſtores for every mouth, and with this we took our flight: But as I was always fearful of a concourſe in the air, Naſgig led them and I brought up the rear.

Besides the above number of people, I believe we could not have leſs than ten thouſand volunteers to the black mountain; ſome to take leave of their friends, and others out of curioſity to ſee our flight. I took three pieces of cannon with me, and proper ſtores.

Our firſt ſtage, after a ſhort halt on the black mountain, was to the governor's palace; where Gadſi received us with great reſpect. I told him my errand, which he approved; for, ſays he, countryman, it is now as much my intereſt to keep my old maſters out, as ever it was to ſerve them when in: And you have taken the only method in the world to do it effectually. I conſulted him where I ſhould fix my colony, and by his advice fixed it on this ſide the wood, with ſome ſcattering habitations behind the wood, as watch-houſes to give notice of an enemy; having the wood for ſhelter before they could reach the town, and at the worſt the town for a retreat.

I found by Gadſi, that the ſhips from the little lands were ſoon expected; for that, he ſaid, the Zaps

knew nothing yet of the change of government, nor could, till the ſhips returned; he aſked me, as there was now a good lading, whether I thought fit to let them have it upon proper terms? I told him, I would not hinder their having the metals, or endeavour to ſtop their trade in the leaſt; but ſhould be glad to treat with them about it myſelf.

I GAVE the forge-men, deſcriptions for making ſhovels, ſpades, pickaxes, hammers, and abundant of other iron implements, I ſhould want in the building of the new town; all which we got ready and carried with us. We then took flight, and alighted on the ſpot of our intended city; and having viewed the ground ſome miles each way, we drew the out lines, and ſet a great number of hands to the cutting down trees, digging holes, and making trenches for the foundations. In ſhort, we were all hands at it, and the women fetched the proviſions; but I was obliged to ſhew them every ſingle ſtep they were to take towards the new erections; and I muſt ſay, it was with great pleaſure I did it, they ſeldom wanting to be told twice, having as quick an apprehenſion of what they heard or ſaw, as any people I had ever met with.

THE whole city, according to our plan, was to conſiſt of ſeveral long ſtrait ſtreets, parallel to each other, with gardens backwards, each way, and traverſe paſſages at proper diſtances, to croſs each ſtreet from one to the other, quite through the whole city.

WHILE this work was in hand, I took a progreſs to view the other country Maleck had told me of. We had not taken a very long flight, before we ſaw at a diſtance, ſeveral perſons of that country travelling to

mount Alkoe for metals. I had a great mind to have ſome talk with them about their kingdom, and ordered my bearers to go to them; they told me they durſt not, for one of them would kill ten men. I did not chuſe to force them to it for fear of ſome miſchief; but obſerving which way they came, and that they came in ſeveral ſmall bodies, of ſix or eight together, and that there was a little wood, and ſome buſhes between me and them; I ordered my bearers to ſink beneath the trees out of their ſight, and to ground me juſt at the foot of the wood; for I reſolved to know ſomething more of them before we parted.

I LAY perdue, till they arrived within ſixty paces of me; then aſking Maleck if he knew their language, and he telling me he did, having often converſed with them at the mines; I bid him greet them, and tell them I was a friend and be ſure to ſtand by me. There were ſeven of them, and many more at different diſtances. I ſhewed myſelf, and Maleck ſpoke to them, when two or three of the hindermoſt ran quite away; one ſtood and looked very ſurly, but the reſt who had ſtood with him turning to run, I bid Maleck tell him, if he did not call them back, I would kill them He that ſtood, then called to them, but they mending their pace upon it, I let fly, and ſhot one in the ſhoulder, who dropping, I was afraid I had killed him. I then went up to the other, who had not ſtirred even at the report of the gun; ſeeming quite terrified I took him by the hand and kiſſed it, which made him recover himſelf a little, and he took mine and kiſſed it.

I BID Maleck tell him, I was a great traveller, and only wanted to talk with them; but ſeeing the man had ſhot ſtir, I went to him, and by Maleck told him,

I was ſorry I had hurt him, which I ſhould not have attempted, had he not ſhewn a miſtruſt in me by running away; for I could not bear that; this I ſaid, to keep the other with me. I ſaw I had hurt his ſhoulder, but being at a great diſtance, the ball had not entered the blade bone, but ſtopping there, had fallen out; ſo tying my handkerchief over it, I told him, I hoped it would ſoon be well.

I INQUIRED into their country, its name, the intent of their journey this way, their trades, the fruits, birds, and beaſts of the country.

THE man I had ſhot, I found was in pain, which gave me no little concern; ſo I applied myſelf chiefly to the other, who told me, the name of his country was Norbon, a large kingdom and very populous, he ſaid, in ſome parts of it, and was governed by Oniwheſke, an old and good king. He has only one daughter, ſays he, named Stygee; ſo that I am afraid when he dies, it will go to a good-for-nothing nephew of his, a deſperate debauched man, who will probably ruin us and deſtroy that kingdom, which has been in the Oniwheſke family theſe fifteen hundred years. Will not his daughter have the kingdom, ſays I, after his death, or her children? Children, ſays he, no, that is the pity, all would be well if ſhe had but children, and the ſtate continue fifteen hundred years longer in the ſame good family. How is it poſſible for any one to know that, ſays I? You may know how long it has, but how long it will laſt, is mere gueſs work. No, ſays he, this very time, and the preſent circumſtances of our kingdom, were foretold at the birth of the firſt king we ever had, who was of the preſent royal family. How ſo, ſays I? Why, ſays he, before we had any

king, we had a very good old man, who lived retired in a cave by the ſea; and to him every body under their difficulties repaired for advice. This old man happening to be very ill, every body was under great affliction for fear they ſhould loſe him; when flocking to his aſſiſtance, he told them, they need not fear his death, till the birth of a king who ſhould reign fifteen hundred years. At hearing this all perſons then preſent, apprehended that his diſorder had turned his brain; but he perſiſted in it and recovered.

AFTER a few years, a great number of perſons being about him, he told them he muſt now depart; for that their king was born, and pointed to a ſucking child a poor woman had then in her arms. It cauſed a great wonder in his audience at the thoughts of that poor child's ever becoming a king; but he told them it was ſo decreed, and further that as he was to die the next day, if they would gather all together, he would let them know what was to come in future times.

WHEN they were met, the woman and child being amongſt them, he told them, that child was their king, and that his loins ſhould produce them a race of kings for fifteen hundred years, during which time they ſhould be happily governed; but then a female inhabitant of the ſkies, ſhould claim the dominion; and together with the kingdom be utterly deſtroyed, unleſs a meſſenger from above, with a crown in each hand, ſhould procure her a male of her own kind; and then the kingdom ſhould remain for the like number of years to her poſterity. Now, ſays he, the time will expire very ſoon, and as no one has been, or it is believed ever will come with two ſuch crowns; the princeſs Stygee, though ſhe undoubtedly will try for

it, has little hopes of ſucceeding her father; for her couſin Felbamko pretends, as no woman ever reigned with us, he is the right heir, and will have the kingdom. Pray, ſays I, what do you mean by an inhabitant of the air? O, ſays he, ſhe flies. And do moſt of your country folks fly, ſays I? for I perceive you do not. No, ſays he, no one but the princeſs Stygee. How comes that about, ſays I? Her mother, when ſhe was with child with her, ſays he, being one day in a wood near the palace, and having ſtraggled from her company, was attacked by a man with a graundee; who not knowing her, claſped her within his graundee, and would have debauched her; but perceiving her cries had brought ſome of her ſervants to her aſſiſtance, he quitted her, and went off: This accident threw her into ſuch a fright, that it was a long time before ſhe recovered; and then was delivered of a daughter with the graundee. My friend, ſays I, your meeting with me will be a very happy affair for your kingdom. I am the man the princeſs expects; go back to the princeſs, and let her and her father know, I will be with them in ſix days, and eſtabliſh his dominions in the princeſs.

THE fellow looked at me, thinking I joked, but never offered to ſtir a foot. Why do not you go, ſays I? and for the good news you bear to the princeſs, I will ſee you ſhall be made one of the greateſt men in Norbon; the man ſmiled ſtill, but could not conceive I was in earneſt: I aſked him then how long he ſhould be in going to the palace, he ſaid three days at ſooneſt. Deliver but your meſſage right, ſays I, and I will aſſure you it ſhall be the better for you. The man ſeeing me look ſerious, did at length believe me, and promiſed he would obey me punctually; but he had

not ſeen how I came to the place he met me at, for I had ordered my bearers into the wood with my chair, before I ſhewed myſelf.

He arrived, as I afterwards found, at the palace, the fourth morning very early, and paſſing the guard in a great heat; with much ado was introduced to the king, and diſcharged himſelf of my meſſage. His majeſty giving no credit to him, thought he had been mad; but he affirming it to be true, and telling the king at what a diſtance I had knocked down his companion, and made a great hole in his back, only with holding up a thing I had in my hand, which made a great noiſe; Oniwheſke ordered his daughter to come before him, who having herſelf heard the man's report, and being very willing to believe it, with the king's leave, deſired that the meſſenger might be detained till the appointed day, and taken care of; and that preparations ſhould be made for the reception of the ſtranger, in caſe it ſhould be true.

The noiſe of my coming, and my errand, excited every one's curioſity to ſee me arrive; and the day being come, I hovered over the city a conſiderable time, to be ſure of grounding right. The king and his daughter, on the rumour of my appearing, came forth to view me and receive me at my alighting. The people were collected into a large ſquare, on one ſide of the palace, and ſtanding in ſeveral cluſters at different places; I judged where the king might ſeem moſt likely to be, and ordered my bearers to alight there; but I happened upon the moſt unlucky poſt, as it might have proved, and at the ſame time the moſt lucky, I could have found there; for I had ſcarce raiſed myſelf from my chair, but Felbamko puſhing up to

me through the throng, and lifting up a large club he held in his hand, had certainly diſpatched me, if I had not at the inſtant, drawn a piſtol from my girdle, and ſhot him dead upon the ſpot; inſomuch, that the club which was then over my head, fell gently down on my ſhoulder.

I DID not then know who it was I had killed; but for fear of a freſh attempt, I drew out another piſtol and my cutlaſs, and inquiring at which part of the ſquare the king was, I walked directly up to him, he not as yet knowing what had happened. His majeſty and his daughter met me, and welcomed me into his dominions. I fell at the king's feet, telling him I brought a meſſage, which I hoped would excuſe my entering his majeſty's dominions without the formality of obtaining his leave.

WHEN we came to the palace, the king ordered ſome refreſhments to be given me and my ſervants; and then, that I ſhould be conducted to the room of audience.

THE report of Felbamko's death had reached the palace before us, and that it was by my hand; this greatly ſurpriſed the whole court, but proved agreeable news to Stygee.

AT my entrance into the room of audience, the king was ſitting at the further end of it againſt the wall, with his daughter on his right hand; and a ſeat was placed for me at his left, but nearer to the middle of the room ſide-ways, on which I was ordered to ſit down; there were abundance of the courtiers preſent, and above me was a ſeat ordered for one of them, who I found afterwards was one of the religious.

HIS majeſty aſked me aloud, how it happened, that the firſt moment of my entering his dominions, I ſhould dip my hands in blood, and that too, of one of his neareſt relations.

I THEN got up to make my anſwer; but his majeſty ordering me to my ſeat again, I told him, that as it was moſt certain, I knew no one perſon in his kingdom, ſo it could not be ſuppoſed I could have an ill deſign againſt any one, eſpecially againſt that royal blood, into whoſe hands I then came to render myſelf; but the truth was, that what I had done was in preſervation of my own life; for that the perſon ſlain had ruſhed through the crowd upon me, with a great club intending to murther me; and that whilſt the blow was over my head, I killed him in ſuch poſition, that by his fall, the club reſted on my ſhoulder, but was then too weak to hurt me.

THE king aſking if that was the real caſe, ſeveral from the lower end of the room ſaid they were informed it was; and one in particular ſaid he ſaw the tranſaction, and I had declared it faithfully. Then, ſays the king, you are aquitted. And now what brings you hither? relate your buſineſs.

"GREAT Sir, ſays I, it is my peculiar happineſs, to "be appointed by providence as the propoſer of a "marriage for the princeſs Stygee your daughter, "with a potent neighbouring monarch; having already "been enabled to perform things paſt belief for his "honour. Know then, great Sir, I am a native of the "north, and through infinite perils and hardſhips, at "laſt arrived in the dominions of Georigetti, where I "have given peace to his ſtate, by the death of the "uſurper Harlokin. I have juſt alſo conquered the

" kingdom of mount Alkoe for my maſter, and am " here come to make your daughter an offer of both " crowns, and alſo of all that is my maſter's, with his " perſon in marriage."

THE old prieſt then roſe and ſaid, " May it pleaſe " your majeſty, we are almoſt right; but what has al- " ways ſtaggered me is, how the perſon ſhould come; " for the meſſenger to us on this errand is to come " from above. Now this perſon has not the graundee, " and therefore could not come from thence; as for " the reſt, I underſtand the prince, from whom he " brings this offer to your daughter has the graundee, " and ſo is a male of her own kind: And I underſtand " the two kingdoms in his poſſeſſion, to be the two " crowns in the meſſenger's hands; but I ſay, what I " ſtick at is his coming from above."

WHAT, ſays Stygee, did not you ſee him come? No, ſays he. O, ſays ſhe, he came in the air, and was a long time over the city before he deſcended. That is impoſſible, ſays the old prieſt, for he is ſmooth like us. Indeed Sir, ſays ſhe, I ſaw him, and ſo did moſt of the court. The king and nobles then atteſting this truth; Sir, ſays the prieſt to the king, it is compleated, and your majeſty muſt do the reſt.

I LITTLE expected, ſays the king, to ſee this day; and now, daughter, as this meſſage was deſigned for you, you only can anſwer it; but ſtill I muſt ſay, it ſurpaſſes my comprehenſion, that in the decree of providence, it ſhould be ſo ordered, that the very hand which brings the accompliſhment of what has been ſo long ſince foretold us, ſhould, without deſign, have juſt deſtroyed all that could have rendered the marriage ſtate uncomfortable to you.

STYGRE then declared, ſhe ſubmitted to fate, and her father's will.

I STAYED here a week, to view the country and the ſea, which I heard was not far off. Here were many uſeful beaſts, for food and burthen, fowls alſo in plenty, and fiſh near the ſea coaſts, and the people eat fleſh; ſo that I thought myſelf among mankind again. I made all the remarks the ſhortneſs of the time would allow, and then taking my leave, departed.

I RETURNED to the colony, where I heard that the little landers had been on the coaſt; but I not being there or any lading ready they were gone away again. However they had detained two of them. I was pleaſed with that, but ſorry they were returned empty.

I EXAMINED the priſoners, and by giving them liberty and good uſage they ſettled amongſt us; and the next fleet that came, the ſailors to a man were all my own, the moment they could get to ſhore; this, though I thought it would have ſpoiled our trade at firſt, brought the iſlanders and me to the following compromiſe, and upon this occaſion. Their ſhips having lain on our coaſts one whole ſeaſon, for want of hands to carry them back; I came to an agreement with their commanders, for they were all willing to return, that ſuch a number of them ſhould be left as hoſtages with me, till the return of a number of my own men, which I ſhould lend them to navigate their ſhips home; and I ſent word to the Zaps, that as it might be beneficial to us both, to keep the trade ſtill on foot; to prevent the like inconveniencies for the future, I

would buy their ſhipping, paying for them in metals; and agree to furniſh them yearly, with ſuch a quantity of my goods, at a ſtated price, and would ſend them by my own people, which they approving, the trade went on in a very agreeable and profitable manner; and we in time built ſeveral new veſſels of our own, and employed abundance of hands in the trade, and had plenty of handicrafts-men of different occupations, each of whom I obliged to keep three natives under him to be trained up in his buſineſs.

CHAP. XXI.

A diſcourſe on Marriage between Peter and Georigetti; Peter propoſes Stygee; the king accepts it; relates his tranſactions at Norbon; the marriage is conſummated; account of the marriage ceremony; Peter goes to Norbon; opens a free trade to mount Alkoe; gets traders to ſettle at Norbon; convoys cattle to mount Alkoe.

AT my return to Saſs Doorpt Swangeanty I went directly to the king, and giving him an account of the ſettlement, and my proceedings thereon; he told me, his whole kingdom would not be an equivalent for the ſervices I had done him. I begged of him, to look on them in no other light, than as flowing from my duty; but if when I ſhould be no more, he or his children would be gracious to my family, it was all I deſired.

THIS father ſays the king I can undertake for myſelf; but who is to come after me nobody knows; for I ſhall never marry, no, Yaccombourſe has given

me a ſurfeit of woman kind; and unleſs the ſtates will ſettle the kingdom on you, to which I will conſent, it will probably be torn to pieces again by different competitors; for I am the laſt of the line of Begſurbeck, and of all the blood royal: And indeed, who ſo proper to maintain it flouriſhing, as he who has brought it to the preſent perfection.

GREAT Sir, ſays I, my ambition riſes no higher, than to abound in good deeds whilſt I live, and to perfect my children in the ſame principle; and this I hope will intitle them to a ſupport, when I am gone. But, ſays I, why is your majeſty ſo averſe to marriage, merely becauſe of a woman you could not expect to be true to you? Not expect it, ſays he? what ſtronger tie upon earth could ſhe have had to be true, than my affection; and all that my kingdom could afford her? Weak things all, Sir, ſays I. Why, what could ſhe have had, ſays he, in ſome warmth? Honour, Sir, ſays I, and virtue, both which ſhe abandoned to become yours; and thoſe once loſt, how could you expect her to be true? You are too hard for me, father, ſays he; but they are all alike, and I do not believe there is a grain of honour in any of them. In any of them like Yaccombourſe, I admit Sir, ſays I, but think not ſo of others; for no part of our ſpecies abounds more with it, or is more tender of it, than a good woman; and take my word for it, Sir, there is more real ſincerity in an ordinary wife, than in the moſt extraordinary miſtreſs. We are all biaſſed naturally by intereſt; and as there can be but one real intereſt between the man and wife, ſo the intereſt of a miſtreſs is, and ever will be, only to accommodate herſelf; for it is all one to her with whom ſhe engages, ſo ſhe can raiſe but the market by a change; Now, if your majeſty could find an agreeable and virtuous wife, one deſerving of your royal perſon and bed,

and perhaps with a kingdom for her dowry; a partner fit to ſhare your cares, as well as glory; would it not be a great pleaſure to you, to be poſſeſſed of ſuch a mate? And to ſee heirs ariſing under your joint tuition, to convey down you royal blood to the lateſt poſterity? Would not this I ſay, be a grateful reflection to you, in your declining years?

TRULY father, ſays the king, as you have painted it, the proſpect could not fail to pleaſe; and under the circumſtances you have put it, it would meet my approbation; but where is ſuch a thing, as a woman of this character to be found; I fear only in the imagination.

SIR, ſays I, after a ſeeming muſe for ſome time, what ſhould you think of Oniwheſke, the king of Norbon's daughter; he has but that one child I hear? Dear father have done, ſays his majeſty; to what purpoſe ſhould you mention her? We but barely know there is ſuch a ſtate, we have never had an intercourſe; and beſides, as you ſay he has but one child, can you ſuppoſe ſhe will ever marry, to leave ſo fine a kingdom, and live here? But pray Sir, ſays I, now we are ſuppoſing, ſuppoſe ſhe ſhould, with her father's conſent, be willing to marry you, would you have her for your queen? To make any doubt of that father, ſays he, is almoſt to ſuppoſe me a fool. Then Sir, ſays I, her father has conſented, and ſhe too; and if I durſt have preſumed ſo far, or had known your mind ſooner, ſhe would, I believe have ventured with me, to have become yours; but you might have ſlighted her, and crowned heads are not to be trifled with; but ſince you are pleaſed to ſhew your approbation of it, I can aſſure you, Sir, her perſon will yield to none in her majeſty's dominions: For Sir,

I have been there, and have ſeen her, and ſhe is your own, and her kingdom too, upon demand.

FATHER, ſays the king, looking earneſtly at me; I have been frequently, ſince I knew you firſt, in doubt of my own exiſtence, my life ſeems a dream to me; for if exiſtence is to be judged of by one's faculties only, I have been in ſuch a deluſion of them ever ſince, that as I find myſelf unable to judge with certainty of any other thing, ſo I am ſubject to doubt, whether I do really exiſt. Are theſe things poſſible that you tell me, father?

I THEN told him the whole affair, and adviſed him by all means to accept the offer, and marry the princeſs out of hand.

HIS majeſty, when I had brought him thoroughly to believe me, was as eager to conſummate the marriage, as I was to have him. But then, whether he ſhould go to her, or ſhe come to him was the queſtion. I told him, it was a thing unuſual for a ſovereign to quit his own dominions for a wife; but would adviſe an embaſſy to her father, with notice, that his majeſty would meet and eſpouſe her, on the frontiers of the two kingdoms.

THE embaſſadors returning, with an appointment of time and place; it was not above a month, before I had ſettled Stygee on the thrones of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti and mount Alkoe, with the reverſion of the kingdom of Norbon, without a competitor.

I SHALL here give you an account of the marriage ceremony. The king being arrived on the borders, Stygee, who had waited but a few hours at the laſt village in Norbon, advanced to his majeſty or the very

[redacted] OF

[redacted] two kingdoms; a line
[redacted] each. The king
[redacted] from the company a
[redacted] hand, on their own
[redacted] advanced, and be-

[redacted] he and she were
[redacted] and would
[redacted] ; in which each
[redacted] ive; shew
[redacted] each ex-
[redacted] laid it upon
[redacted] them but as
[redacted] round with
[redacted] upon
[redacted] ceremony, with
[redacted] Pamela. So
[redacted] voices had
[redacted] and bridegroom
[redacted] amidst
[redacted] Georgetti's

[redacted] for the prin-
[redacted] been but
[redacted] majesty
[redacted] in my
[redacted] that
[redacted] proce-

[redacted] charged
[redacted] ;
[redacted] mount
[redacted] frequently

on the Norbonese coast to carry off the iron, and other metal from thence unwrought; and paid part of their return in wrought metals: I ordered some of the next that came, to be stopped, and brought to me; and the day before I had fixed for my departure, notice was sent, that twelve of those traders were stopped, and in custody at the sea side; I longed to see them, but then considering that it would take more time to bring them to Apsilo the capital, where I was, than I should take in going to them, and returning; I resolved to go and examine them myself.

They told me, they traded with small vessels to Norbon for metals; which they carried home, and wrought great part of it themselves, sending it to, and dispersing it in several islands at a distance; and also sold the unwrought to several people, who carried it they knew not whither, in great ships. They said they kept abundance of hands at work in the trade. I asked if their artificers wrought it for their own profit, or their masters. They told me for masters, themselves being all slaves. And are you all slaves, says I? They told me yes, all but one, pointing to him. I then ordered him to be secured and removed; and told them, if they would procure some hands to settle at Norbon and mount Alkoe, they should all be made free, have lands assigned them, and have other great privileges; and I did not doubt in time, would become the richest men in the country; for I understood by them, they were acquainted with the use of money. I asked them, what other commodities they brought to Norbon in exchange. They said, cloaths for the people, both what they received in exchange from others who bought their iron, and some of a coarser sort of their own making. I found in my discourse I had with them, that

out of my eleven men, there were perſons of four different occupations; ſo I promiſed thoſe who would ſtay with me their freedoms, good houſes, and other rewards; and ſending three hands home with the veſſel, and a full freight, according to the value of the cargoe they brought; I ordered them to engage as many as they could of their countrymen of diſtinct trades, to come and ſettle with me; and to be ſure if they had any grain, corn, roots, plants, or ſeeds, uſually eaten for food, to bring all they could get with them, and they ſhould have good returns for them; and as to thoſe good hands that ſettled here, they ſhould be allowed all materials, to work for their own profit the firſt year; and after that, they ſhould alſo work for themſelves, allowing the king one tenth of the clear profit. This took ſo far with them, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty I got any of them to carry the ſhip back, for fear they ſhould not be able to return.

BEFORE I parted from them, I aſſigned the eight who were left, all proper conveniences, and recommended them to the king's protection; and I ordered the owner then in cuſtody, to be conducted to Alkoe, and from thence to Brandleguarp; where treating him kindly, and giving him liberty, I made my proper uſe of him.

THE king having lent me a convoy to conduct my priſoner, and given me a licence for as many cattle of the ſorts I choſe, as I pleaſed to drive to Georigetti's dominions; I made them drive a great number of ſheep, of the fineſt wool I ever ſaw, and very large alſo; a great numbers of creatures not unlike an aſs for ſhape, but with two upright horns and ſhort ears, which gave abundance of rich milk; and alſo ſome ſwine. All theſe

were drove to, and distributed at my new colony, where I let them remain, till I had provided a proper receptacle for them at Doorpt Swangeanti, near the woods; when I brought many over the black mountain, and distributed them there, with directions how to manage them; and in about seven years time we held a little beast market near Brandleguarp, twice a year, where the spare cattle were brought up, and preserved in salt till the next market; for I had some years before, made large salt works near the sea, at mount Aikoe; which imployed abundance of hands, and was now become a considerable trade.

We had iron, copper, and silver money, which went very current; and had butter and cheese from the farms near the woods, as plenty as we had the fruits before; great numbers of families having settled there; and there was scarce a family but was of some occupation or other.

By the accounts I received from the mines, from time to time, it was prodigious to hear what vast quantities of metals were prepared in one year now, by little above one third of the hands that were usually employed in them before; for now the mens ambition was, to leave a good week's work done at their return, for an example to those who were coming; and the overseers told me, they would sing and work, with the greatest delight imaginable, whilst they pleased themselves with telling one another how they intended to spend the next fourteen days.

CHAP. XXII.

Peter looking over his books finds a Latin bible; ſets about a tranſlation; teaches ſome of the ragams letters; ſets up a paper manufacture; makes the ragams read the bible; the ragams teach others to read and write; a fair kept at the black mountain; Peter's reflections on the Swangeantines.

ALL things being now ſo ſettled, that they would go on of themſelves; and having no further direct view in my head, I ſpent ſome time with my wife; and looking over my books to divert myſelf, with the greateſt joy imaginable, I found that the bible which I had taken to be in the Portugueſe tongue, was a Latin one. It was many years ſince I had thought of that language, but on this occaſion, by force of memory and recollection, and with ſome attention, conſideration, and practice, I found it return to me in ſo plentiful a manner, that I fully reſolved to tranſlate my bible into the Swangeantine tongue.

I SENT directly for Laſmeel to be my amanuenſis; and to work we went upon the tranſlation.

WE began at the creation, and deſcending to the flood, went on to the Jewiſh captivity in Egypt, and deliverance by Moſes; leaving out the genealogies, and all the Jewiſh ceremonies and laws except the ten commandments. I tranſlated the books of Samuel and Kings, down to the Babiloniſh captivity. I then tranſlated ſuch parts of the Prophets, as were neceſſary to introduce the

Meſſiah, and diſcover him; the book of Pſalms, Job, and the Proverbs, and with the utmoſt impatience haſted to the New Teſtament. But then conſidering that when I had done, as only Laſmeel and myſelf could read it, in caſe of our deaths, the tranſlation muſt die with us; I choſe out ſix of the junior ragams, and two of the elder to learn letters and in leſs than twelve months, I had brought them all to read mine and Laſmeel's writing perfectly well.

I INSTRUCTED theſe ragams at ſpare hours, whilſt I went on with my tranſlation, but finding my paper grow low, having had a great ſupply of courſiſh linnen, and a ſort of calicoes from the iſles, in return for our metals; I ſet up a manufactory from that, and ſome gums of the trees, which we boiled with it to a pulp, in iron pans, and beating it to pieces, made a uſeful paper, which would bear ink tolerably. But I could find nothing to make ink of, though I ſent over all the country, to ſearch for every herb and fruit not commonly uſed; till at laſt I found an herb and flower on it, which if taken before the flower faded, would by boiling thoroughly become blue; this, by ſtill more boiling in a copper pan, till it was dry and burnt hard to the bottom, in ſome meaſure anſwered my purpoſe, and I fixed upon it as the beſt I could obtain from all my experiments.

WHEN the ragams were maſters of their pens, I ſet ſix of them to copy what Laſmeel had finiſhed, and the other two to teach their brethren; and in two years time, by a pretty conſtant application, for I made them tranſcribe it perfectly fair and intelligible, we finiſhed our tranſlation, and two fair copies.

I THEN ordering the ragams to read a portion of it to the people conſtantly in the mouch; they from the novelty of the ſtory, at firſt grew ſo exceeding fond of it, that upon the proper expoſitions of it, I taught the ragams afterwards to make, they began to apply it ſeriouſly to religious purpoſes.

MY writing ragams were very fond of their knowledge of letters; and trade and commerce now increaſing, which put every one more or leſs in want of the ſame knowledge; they made a great profit of it, by inſtructing all who applied to them. This increaſe of writing, neceſſarily provided a maintenance for ſeveral perſons who travelled to Norbon for quills and ſold them to the Swangeantines at extravagant rates; till the Norboneſe hearing that, brought them themſelves to the foot of the mountain, where the Swangeantines bought them, as they did ſeveral other commodities, which one country had, and the other wanted, eſpecially iron wares of almoſt every denomination; ſo that the mountain being ſo exceſſive high, was the barrier; for the Norboneſe finding that difficulty in aſcending and deſcending, which the Swangeantines with their graundees did not; there was a conſtant market of buyers and ſellers on the mount Alkoe ſide of the black mountain; which by degrees grew the general mart of the three kingdoms.

I HAVE often reflected with myſelf, and have been amazed to think that ſo ingenious and induſtrious a people, as the Swangeantines have ſince appeared to be; and who till I came amongſt them, had nothing more than bare food, and a hole to lie in, in a barren rocky country, and then ſeemed to deſire only what they had; ſhould in ten years time, be ſupplied not

only with the conveniencies, but ſuperfluities of life; and that they ſhould then become ſo fond of them, as rather willingly to part with life itſelf, than be reduced to the ſtate I found them in. And I have as often on this occaſion reflected on the goodneſs of providence, in rendering one part of mankind eaſy under the abſence of ſuch comforts as others could not reſt without; and have made it a great argument for my aſſent to well-atteſted truths above my comprehenſion. For, ſays I, to have affirmed at my firſt coming either that theſe things could have been made at all, or when done could have been of any additional benefit to theſe people, would have been ſo far beyond their imaginations, that the reporter of ſo plain a truth, as they now find it, would have been looked upon as a madman or an impoſter; but by opening their views by little and little, and ſhewing them the dependance of one thing upon another; he that ſhould now affirm the inutility of them would be obſerved in a much worſe light. And yet, without any imbelliſhments of art, how did this ſo great a people live under the protection of providence? Let us firſt view them at a vaſt diſtance from any ſort of ſuſtenance, yet from the help of the graundee, that diſtance was but a ſtep to them. They were forced to inhabit the rocks, from an utter incapacity of providing ſhelter elſe where, having no tool that would either cut down timber for an habitation, or dig up the earth for a fence, or materials to make one; but they had a liquor that would diſſolve the rock itſelf into habitations. They had neither beaſt or fiſh, for food or burthen; but they had fruits equivalent to both, of the ſame reliſh, and as wholeſome without ſhedding blood. Their fruits were dangerous, till they had fermented in a boiling heat; and they had neither the ſun or any fire, or the know-

ledge how to propagate or continue it. But they had their hot ſprings always boiling, without their care or concern. They had neither the ſkins of beaſts, the original cloathing, or any other artificial covering from the weather; but they were born with that warm cloathing the graundee, which being of a conſiderable denſity and full of veins flowing with warm blood, not only defended their fleſh from all outward injuries, but was a moſt ſoft, comely, and warm dreſs to the body. They lived moſtly in the dark rock, having leſs difference of light with the change of ſeaſons, than other people have; but either by cuſtom or make, more light than what providence has ſent them in the ſweecoe, is diſagreeable: So that where little is to be obtained, providence, by confining the capacity, can give content with that; and where apparent wants are, we may ſee by theſe people, how careful providence is to ſupply them; for neither the graundee, the ſweecoes, or their ſprings, are to be found where thoſe neceſſaries can be ſupplied by other means.

AMONGST my other conſiderations, I have often thought, that if I had gone to the top of the black mountains northward of Brandlegnarp, in the very lighteſt time, I might have ſeen the ſun; but theſe mountains were ſo elevated, that our lighteſt time was only the gilded glimmering of their tops, having never ſeen ſo much light on them as totally to eclipſe all the ſtars; of which we had always the ſame in view, but in different poſitions.

CHAP. XXIII.

Peter's children provided for; Youwarkee's death; how the king and queen ſpend their time; Peter grows melancholy; wants to get to England; contrives means; is taken up at ſea.

I HAD now been at Brandleguarp ten years, and my children were all provided for by the king, but Dickey, as faſt as they were qualified for employment; and ſuch as were fit for it, were married off to the beſt alliances in the country; ſo that I had only to ſit down and ſee every thing I had put my hand to proſper, and not an evil eye in the three kingdoms caſt at me: But about my eleventh or twelfth year, my wife falling into a lingering diſorder, at the end of two years, it carried her off. This was the firſt real affliction I had ſuffered for many years, and ſo ſoured my temper that I became fit for nothing, and it was painful to me even to think of buſineſs.

THE king's marriage had produced four children, three ſons and a daughter; which he would frequently tell me were mine.

OLD Oniwheſke was dead, and the king and queen divided their whole time equally, between Brandleguarp and Apſilo: But he was building a palace at my

new colony; which by this time was grown to a vaſt city and was called Stygena in compliment to the queen, and this new palace was deſigned to receive the court one third of the year, as it lay almoſt at equal diſtance between both his other palaces. This method which his majeſty took at my perſuaſion on the death of Oniwheſke, though it went againſt the grain at firſt, was now grown ſo habitual to him, and he ſaw his own intereſt ſo much in it, in the love and eſteem it procured him from the people, that at laſt he wanted no ſpur to it.

My melancholy for the death of my wife, which I hoped time would wear off, rather gained ground upon me; and though I was as much regarded as ever by the whole court, yet it grew troubleſome to me, even to be aſked my advice; and it not only ſurpriſed thoſe about me but even myſelf, to ſee the ſame genius, without any viſible natural decay, in ſo ſhort a time, from the moſt ſprightly and enterpriſing, become the moſt phlegmatic and inactive.

My longings after my native country, ever ſince my wife's death, redoubled upon me; and I had formed ſeveral ſchemes of getting thither; as firſt, I had formed a project of going off by the iſlands, as I had ſo many ſmall veſſels at command there, and to get into the main ocean, and try my fortune that way; but upon inquiry, I found that my veſſels could not get to ſea, or elſewhere, but to the Zaps iſlands, by reaſon of the many rocks and ſand-banks which would oppoſe me, unleſs I went through the Zaps country; which in the light they had reaſon to view me, I was afraid to do.

Then I had thoughts of going from the coaſt of Norbon; but that muſt have been in one of the foreign veſſels, and they coming from a quite different quarter than I muſt go, in all probability if I had put to ſea any way they were unacquainted with, they having no compaſs, we muſt have periſhed; for the more I grew by degrees acquainted with the ſituation of Doopt Swangeanti, the ſtronger were my conjectures, that my neareſt continent muſt be the ſouthern coaſt of America; but ſtill it was only conjecture. At length being tired and uneaſy, I reſolved as I was accuſtomed to flight and loved it; I would take a turn for ſome days, carry me where it would, I ſhould certainly light on ſome land, whence at worſt I could but come back again. I then went to ſee if my chair, board and ropes were ſound, for I had not uſed them for ſeveral years paſt; but I found them all ſo crazy, I durſt not venture in them; which diſappointment put off my journey for ſome time. However, as I had ſtill the thought remaining, it put me on ſeeking ſome other method to put it in practice: So I contrived the poles from which you took me, being a ſort of hollow cane the Swangeantines make their ſpears of, but exceeding ſtrong and ſpringy; which interwoven with ſmall cords, were my ſeat, and were much lighter than my chair; and theſe buoyed me up when your goodneſs relieved me. I had taken mount Alkoe bearers, as I knew I muſt come to a country of more light; and I now find, if I had not fallen, I muſt ſoon have reached land, if we could have held out, for we were come too far to think of returning, without a reſting place: And what will come of my poor bearers, I dread to think, if they attempted to return, they muſt have dropt; for they had complained all the laſt day and night, and had ſhifted very often.

If in your history you think fit to carry down the life of a poor old man any further, you will as well know what to say of me as I can tell you; and I hope what I have hitherto said will in some measure recompence both your expence and labour.

FINIS.

A TABLE OF THE NAMES OF PERSONS AND THINGS,

Mentioned in the Two Volumes.

A

ABB, A Room.
Apſillo, Capital of Norbon.
Arco, A man who committed the firſt murder.
Arndrumſtake, Pendlehamby's Colambat.
Arkoe, Water ſurrounded with wood.

B

Barbarſa, Georigetti's favourite.
Barkatt, A Huſband.
Barras, A leathern apron, or flap behind.
Baſh, A Valet de chambre.
Battingdrigg, The name of an Arkoe.
Begſurbeck, An old king of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.

Born Iſles,	Iſlands to the right Hand.
Boſkee,	A very grand Room, or Saloon.
Bott,	A Gourd.
Bougee,	Lie down.
Brandleguarp,	Chief city of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.

C

Calentar,	A Doctor, or Surgeon.
Cluff,	A Captain.
Colamb,	A Governor.
Colambat,	A Government.
Colapet,	A Bag for proviſion.
Collwarr,	God.
Coovet,	A Manſion-Houſe, or Seat.
Craſhdoorpt,	Quangrallort's Colambat, or country of the Slit.
Craſhee,	Slit.
Crullmott,	A Fruit taſting like a Fowl.

D

David,	Peter's fourth Son.
Doorpt Swangeanti,	The Land of Flight.
Dorrs,	A ſort of Apples.
Doſſee,	A ſoft thing.

E

Emina,	A Rock.

F

Felbamko,	Oniwheſke's Nephew.
Filgay,	A Freeman.
Filus,	A Rib of the Graundee.

G

Gadſi, Governor of Mount Alkoe.
Gauingrant, A revolted Town in the Weſt.
Gawrey, A Woman.
Georigetti, King of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Glaulepzee, An African who eſcaped with Peter.
Glumm, A Man.
Glumm Boſi, A young Man.
Goppo, A Father in Law.
Gorpall, An Enſign.
Gawreny, Women.
Graundee, The Glumms Wings and Dreſs.
Gripſack, A Trumpet.
Grandevolet, Peter's Alkoe.
Gume, The Leather between the Filus's of the Graundee.

H

Hallycarnie, Youwarkee's Siſter, alſo her ſecond Daughter.
Harlokin, Prince of the Rebels.
Hoximo, A place to bury the Dead.
Hunkum, Marriage.

I

Jahamel, The King's Siſter.
Jemmy, Peter's ſecond Son.
I. O. The chief Ragam.

L

Lallio, First King of Sass Doorpt Swangeanti.
Lask, A Slave.
Laskmett, Slavery.
Lasmeel, Peter's Scholar.

M

Maleck, Peter's Man from Mount Alkoe.
Mindrack, The Devil.
Mouch, A Church.
Moucheratt, An Assembly of the States.
Mount Alkoe, A Kingdom taking name from a burning mountain.

N

Nasgig, A common Soldier, made a General at the Request of Peter.
Nicor, A Creature of Barbarsa, the King's Favourite.
Norbon, The Name of the North Country.
Normnbdsgrsutt, Ancient name of Youwankee's Country.

O

Oniweske, King of Norbon.
Ors clam gee, Here am I.

P

Padsi, A Fruit tasting like Figs.
Palang, A Town.
Parky, Sweet.

Patty,	Peter's eldeſt Daughter, alſo his firſt Wife.
Pedro,	Peter's eldeſt Son.
Peter,	The Author.
Pendikhamby,	Youwarkee's Father, the Colamb of Arndrumſtake.
Perigeue,	The firſt born Man.
Philella,	The firſt born Woman.
Puly,	An Image.
Praave,	Modeſt.

Q.

Quangrallort,	Youwarkee's Brother, Colamb of Craſhdoorpt.
Quilly,	Peter's Baſh.

R.

Ragam,	A Prieſt.
Razy,	Mighty.
Richard,	Peter's fifth Son.
Roppin,	Marmalade.
Roſſig,	Quangrallort's Companion.

S.

Sarah,	Peter's youngeſt Daughter.
Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti,	Peter's new Name given to Georigetti's Dominions.
Slip the Graundee,	Drawing the Graundee tight to the body, by a running nooſe on a line.
Stapps,	Minutes.
Stygee,	Oniwheſke's Daughter.
Sweecoe,	An Inſect, giving a ſtrong Light in the Dark.
Sweecoan,	A Fight with Sweecoes.
Swangean,	Flight.

T

Telamine, A Woman, whose Husband committed the first murder.
Tommy, Peter's second Son.

Y

Yaccombourse, The King's Mistress.
Yacom, A Man-child.
Youk, Capital of the West.
Youwarkee, Peter's wife.

Z

Zaps, Lords.

THE

CONTENTS.

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

CHAP. I.

PETER prepares for his father's reception; arguments about his beard; expects his wife; reflections on her not coming; sees a messenger on the rock; has notice of Pendlehamby's arrival, and prepares a treat. *page* 3

CHAP. II.

Peter settles the formality of his father's reception; description of their march, and alighting; receives his father; conducts him to the grotto; offers to beg pardon for his marriage; is prevented by Pendlehamby; Youwarkee not known in her English habit; quarters the officers in the tent. *page* 9

CHAP. III.

The manner of their dinner; believe the fish and fowl to be fruits; hears his brother and the columbas are coming; account of their lying; Peter's reflec-

tions on the want of the graundee; they view the arkoe; ſervants harder to pleaſe than their maſters; reaſon for different dreſſes the ſame day. *page* 16

CHAP. IV.

Quangrallort arrives with the colambs; ſtreightned for accommodation; remove to the tent; Youwarkee not known; Peter relates part of his travels; diſpute about the beaſt-fiſh ſkins. *page* 24

CHAP. V.

Go a fiſhing; catch a beaſt-fiſh; afraid of the gun; how Peter alters his net; a fiſh dinner for the guards; method of dreſſing and eating it. *page* 30

CHAP. VI.

A ſhooting propoſed; all afraid of the gun but one private guard; his behaviour; Pendlehamby at Peter's requeſt makes him a general; Peter's diſcourſe thereon; remainder of his ſtory; the colambs return. *page* 38

CHAP. VII.

Peter finds his ſtores low; ſends Youwarkee to the ſhip; receives an invitation to Georigetti's court. *page* 49

CHAP. VIII.

Naſgig comes with a guard to fetch Peter; long debate about his going; Naſgig's uneaſineſs at Peter's refuſal; relates a prediction to him, and proceedings thereon at Georigetti's court; Peter conſents to go; prepares a machine for that purpoſe. *page* 54

CHAP. IX.

Peter's ſpeech to the ſoldiery; offers them freedom; his journey; is met by the king; the king ſent back, and why; Peter alights in the king's garden; his audience; deſcription of his ſupper and bed. *page* 70

CHAP. X.

The king's apartments deſcribed; Peter is introduced to the king; a moucheratt called; his diſcourſe with the king about religion. *page* 84

CHAP. XI.

Peter's reflections on what he was to perform; ſettles the method of it; his advice to his ſon and daughter; globe-lights living creatures; takes Maleck into his ſervice; Naſgig diſcovers to Peter a plot at court; revolt of Gauingrunt. *page* 92

CHAP. XII.

A moucheratt held; ſpeeches of ragams and colambs; Peter ſettles religion; informs the king of a plot; ſends Naſgig to the ſhip for cannon. *page* 101

CHAP. XIII.

The king hears Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe diſcourſe on the plot; they are impeached by Peter at a moucheratt; condemned and executed; Nicor ſubmits, and is releaſed. *page* 112

CHAP. XIV.

Naſgig returns with cannon; Peter informs him of the execution; appoints him a guard; ſettles the order of his march againſt Harlokin; a combat between Naſgig and the rebel general; the battle; Peter returning with Harlokin's head, is met by a ſweecoan; a public feſtival; ſlavery aboliſhed. *page* 122

CHAP. XV.

A viſitation of the revolted provinces propoſed by Peter; his new name of the country received; religion ſettled in the weſt; ſlavery aboliſhed there; Laſmeel returns with Peter; Peter teaches him letters; the king ſurpriſed at written correſpondence; Peter deſcribes the make of a beaſt to the king. *page* 136

CHAP. XVI.

Peter ſends for his family; a riſing of former ſlaves on that account; takes a view of the city; deſcription of it, and of the country; hot and cold ſprings. *page* 147

CHAP. XVII.

Peter ſends for his family; Pendlehamby gives a fabulous account of the peopling of that country; their policy and government; Peter's diſcourſe on trade; Youwarkee arrives; invites the king and nobles to a treat; ſends to Grandevolet for fowls. *page* 158

CHAP. XVIII.

Peter goes to his father's; traverſes the black mountain; takes a flight to mount Alkoe; gains the miners; overcomes the governor's troops; proclaims Georigetti king; ſeizes the governor; returns him the government; Peter makes laws with the conſent of the people; he returns to Brandleguarp with deputies. *page* 169

CHAP. XIX.

Peter arrives with the deputies; preſents them to the king; they return; a colony decreed to be ſent thither; Naſgig made governor; manner of chuſing the colony; a flight-race, and the intent of it; Walſi wins the prize, and is found to be a gawrey. *page* 187

CHAP. XX.

The race reconciles the two kingdoms; the colony proceeds; build a city; Peter views the country at a diſtance; hears of a prophecy of the king of Norbon's daughter Stygee; goes thither; kills the king's nephew; fulfills the prophecy, by engaging Stygee to Georigetti; returns. *page* 200

CHAP. XXI.

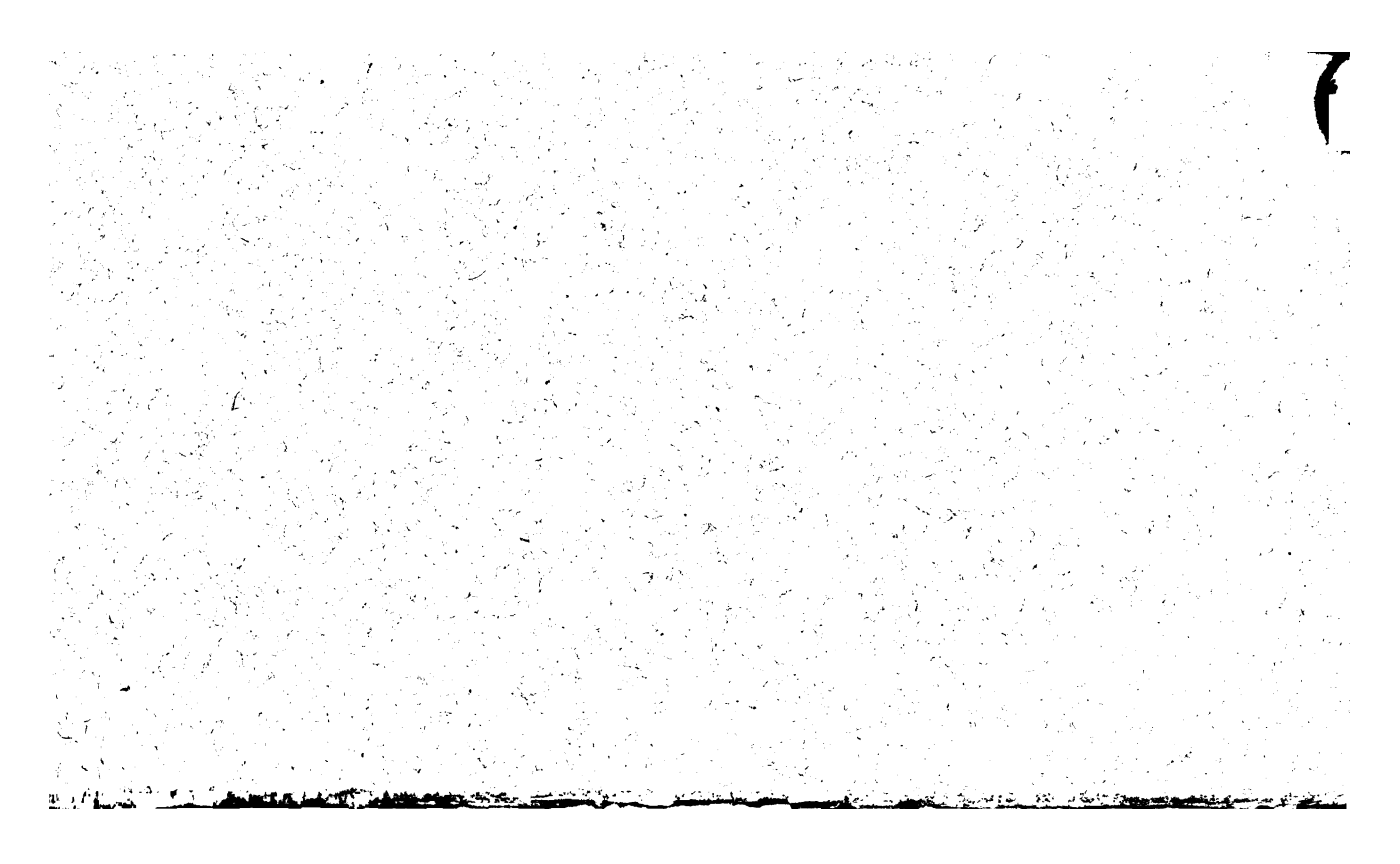
A diſcourſe on marriage between Peter and Georigetti; Peter propoſed Stygee; the king accepts it; relates his tranſactions at Norbon; the marriage is conſummated; account of the marriage ceremony; Peter

goes to Norbon; opens a free trade to mount Alkoe; gets traders to ſettle at Norbon; convoys cattle to mount Alkoe. *page* 212

CHAP. XXII.

Peter looking over his books finds a Latin bible; ſets about a tranſlation; teaches ſome of the ragams letters; ſets up a paper manufacture; makes the ragams read the bible; the ragams teach others to read and write; a fair kept at the black mountain; Peter's reflections on the Swangeantines. *page* 220

CHAP. XXIII.

Peter's children provided for; Youwarkee's death; how the king and queen ſpend their time; Peter grows melancholy; wants to get to England; contrives means; is taken up at ſea. *page* 225

THE END.